



**The Autobiography from Hans Bieri**  
Hired Farm Hand, Pilot, Master Builder



ISBN 978-3-033-04084-7

An Autobiography  
from Hans Bieri



# "Call from Heaven"

The Lord is calling you to say:  
I am your only God!



My life with  
God and Jesus Christ:  
Hired Farm Hand, Emigration to Canada,  
Professional Pilot, Master Builder  
and Family

**Autor**

Hans Bieri

hb44@bluewin.ch

www.hans-bieri.ch

ISBN 978-3-033-04083-0

**The E-Book: "Call from Heaven"**

Autobiography of a pilot,

You can download and save online in various languages for free.

<https://hans-bieri.ch>

Available versions:

German: pdf

English: pdf

Chinese: pdf

**You should know that!**

It doesn't matter whether you are reformed, Catholic, Hindu, Buddhist, Muslim, esoteric, or any other religion. But if you want to go to the eternal kingdom of heaven, you need Jesus Christ and nothing else, that's the only way. Because Jesus says: "I am the way of truth and life, whoever has me also has the father, whoever does not have me also does not have the father". No religion except the gospel of Jesus Christ leads you to the kingdom of heaven.....

**.....all the gods of the nations are idols!  
The gospel is not a religion, but a message to you!**

## About the book

Hans Bieri guides the reader through his life. Flowery and sensitive, he describes his restless childhood as a hiring boy, with numerous changes of school and place of residence, his courageous emigration to Canada in the 1960s, his life as a professional pilot and the task of his dream job in order to be able to start and care for a family. Numerous photos underline the experiences and events in Bieri's colorful life. Letters to his children and grandchildren, as well as lovingly selected Bible passages, depict the life and character of a special person.

Bieri's language is extremely flowery and touching. So he takes the reader by the hand and shows him the blossoming cherry tree, under which he admires a plane for the first time as a little boy, describes the first look into the violet-blue eyes of his great love, the feeling when he holds his daughter in his arms holds and trust in God in all phases of life. Hans Bieri's autobiography is aimed at all readers who want to get a detailed insight into the life of a man who wants to touch the reader with his story as well as with his relationship with God.

An exciting and very worth reading story!



# "Call from Heaven"

Yes, the Lord calls you:  
I am your only god!

And Jesus said:  
Strive to enter by the narrow door! For many  
will seek to enter and will not be able.

And it's that simple:  
Search Jesus, you will find him, then you have  
found heaven!

Jesus calls to you:  
Give me your hand,  
i will take it,  
believe in me with all my heart  
and don't doubt me  
then you will live with me forever!



Dedicated to:

My wife, my children, my daughter-in-law, my son-in-law, my grandchildren, to all my relatives and to all the people in this world who read these words that I have written here for you.

God lets you through  
Jesus Christ say:  
There is no savior but me!

Jesus also says:  
Whoever confesses me before men, the  
Son of Man will also confess him on the  
day of judgment confess before God.

But whoever does not want to know me  
before men, neither will the Son of Man  
know him before God on the day of  
judgment.

I walk the narrow path of life!  
<https://youtu.be/FZsZXX3nQAU>



## Introduction

I'll begin by telling you about how I came to know God and Jesus Christ, and also about the evidence that I received for their existence and the many miracles that I experienced.

I'll then recount some words from the Bible that are especially important to me. They've always strengthened my resolve to follow only God's path, and they're words that you don't normally hear from the pulpit.

Over the course of my life, I've seen many people read books, but I've never seen anyone read the Bible. People act as if they've been poisoned if they as much as hear its words. If they were to read it and someone was to see what they were doing, that would be the absolute end. They'd want the earth to swallow them up. Yes: Never go anywhere near a Bible!

**I'm going to amaze you and show you just how unique the Bible really is. Start reading and see how you're surprised!**

**If you put in the effort, you'll be rewarded with wisdom.**

**God says that to become truly wise, we must first shake off our earthly wisdoms. True wisdom involves nothing more than taking God seriously, loving him, trusting and hoping in him with all our power and with all our thoughts and actions, and believing in him yesterday, today, tomorrow and for all eternity. Amen!**

**Don't assume that I spent my childhood on the straight and narrow or that I've been a flawlessly pious man. 'Revolutionary' and 'rascal' are probably better terms. But I've always helped the weak and the oppressed, and I despise treachery, lies, intrigue, hypocrisy, falseness – and especially 'do-gooders' who look like sheep, but who are actually wolves. I've always fended for myself and have had to fight my way through life. When I needed help, my supposed friends all soon disappeared.**

**But anyway: it's best to start reading. You won't be bored!**

**I was born at 20:30 on 8th December, 1944.**

## **Courtelary**

is in Switzerland, some 695 metres above sea level and 14 km to the west-north-west of Biel/Bienne as the crow flies. The village is spread out over both sides of the River Suze and lies in the central part of the Saint Imier valley in the Jura mountains.

At the top of the valley's northern slope, right among the lush Jura firs, is a single small farmstead that has a beautiful view over the green and fertile valley below.

## A young boy, born to fly

On a gentle slope next to the farm, a young boy, not quite four years old, sits among tall hay under a blossoming cherry tree. His legs are bent at the knee, and he's resting his elbows on his knees while supporting his head with his fists and chewing on a blade of grass. His crystal clear, almost unblinking eyes gaze down at the small airfield that's two kilometres in the distance, and he watches as the planes take off and land.

This is my earliest memory, and it happened in 1948. I didn't know that 18 years later, at 15:50 on 24th March, 1967, I'd be starting a plane on this very airfield and preparing to pull a glider up and over the Jura range. I worked as a tow pilot in my spare time.

My mother and father bought our farm shortly after the end of the Second World War. I had three sisters and three brothers. Money was always in short supply, so my father worked in a nearby chocolate factory while my mother cared for our cattle and land.

I could watch the planes for hours, and even days, at a time; I was transported to another world. Only my mother's shouts could jolt me, and normally then only after I'd already been called for dinner at least three times.

## A new home

My parents sold the property in the Jura mountains in 1949 and bought a small, detached house in Wahlendorf auf dem Frienisberg. My father worked in construction, but his earnings were never quite enough for our needs. Our mother had a hard life seeing that we all always got through the days and the winters. In summer, we went to the forest almost daily to collect mushrooms. We also gathered wood from the forest floor to use for cooking, and for heating in the winter. We earned between four and five Francs for the mushrooms, and we immediately turned these into milk and bread. My mother helped farmers as

well, doing everything from milking cows to reaping crops. This added a few more Francs to the family pot, but also meant that we children were often alone at home. We regularly found ourselves in a lot of mischief, and I have to be honest and say that I was always the ringleader.

### **My brother Walter, but only by a whisker!**

I'll never forget one of our silly escapades. I was six years old at the time, and I was alone at home with my younger brother, Walter. Our house was on a small hill, and there was a road about fifteen metres away and two metres down. There of course weren't any tarmacked roads in Wahrendorf at the time. The baker drove down the road every day at exactly the same time to deliver bread and pastries. He had an old car with very high wheels that left a lot of space underneath the vehicle. We'd taken apart an old pram and built a seat between its wheels. I still don't know how I came up with the hare-brained idea, but I decided to sit my brother on this seat – he was five years old at the time – and push him down the hill when the baker came. He'd go under the car and quickly come out again on the other side.

We readied ourselves, and the baker came right on time, just like always. Walter perched himself on the cart and placed his trust in my launch. After a quick estimate as to how fast the car was approaching, I decided how much power was needed to make the racing car, as we called it, go right between the baker's car's wheels. Okay, it was time! One, two, three and away! The prank didn't go to plan; my push was too strong. The cart went under the front of the car and rattled and screeched before my brother came out from the rear, grazed and covered in scratches. He was back on his feet in an instant, but our racing car was no more. I forget what the baker said, but he probably saw that the situation wasn't so bad and carried on with his round.

I smeared ointment on Walter's wounds and wrapped them in bandages, even covering his head. He looked terrible, so I helped

him into bed and carefully covered him up. All I could see between the duvet and his head bandage were two large, round eyes. “Sleep a little, it’ll help,” I said to him without any pangs of conscience. Our mother came home an hour later. “What in God’s name happened?” she asked. “He just went under the baker’s car...” I said, “I’ve put ointment and bandages on him, and it’s not so bad.”

## **My first teacher**

Everything carried on in more or less the same fashion, but as time passed, a new adventure approached: School. I was enrolled with my mother on 23rd April, 1951.

I can still remember my first day well. I’d been really looking forward to it. The slate with its pencil and sponge, the case where pencils and crayons were kept with a rubber – it was all really something. It was a really happy day, and I liked going to school. I was a good student, and my teacher, Mrs. R. Jaggi, was very kind. In my report for that first year, I had all As and Bs.

## **My mother’s accident**

One day, tragedy struck as my mother and my sister, Käthi, were cycling to the next village. My mother was riding at the back, and my sister was out in front. Suddenly the bicycles touched one another, with my mother’s front wheel hitting my sister’s back wheel. My mother fell to the ground and broke her femur in two places. The knee joint was also broken and the leg became stiff. This happened in 1953, and she was then ill for more or less the rest of her life. She had to endure many different operations.

As my mother was in the hospital for a long time, my teacher often came to our house in the evenings to look after things. She checked that I washed myself and went to sleep, and she also sat on the edge of my bed and prayed with me. She told me stories about God and Jesus, and I always listened intently. One day my mother came back and my teacher stopped coming. I missed my

teacher in the evenings; it seemed like something was missing. I prayed every night by myself and thought about the stories that she'd told me about God and Jesus. After a long while, I suddenly realised that I received everything that I prayed for. I've never forgotten what my teacher told me during that time, and it's shaped my life significantly to this very day. I've never doubted in God and Jesus Christ since.

I ran errands for my teacher every now and again, fetching her milk from the dairy etc. We were a good team. I went to her flat on many occasions, and mostly with a face so dirty that it looked more black than white. She often told me to have a wash myself because I looked like a little black boy. I always obeyed her; she was just so nice. On one occasion, she suddenly bounded over to me and said: "Hansli! That's my flannel!" – but it was too late. It was already filthy. She laughed and said: "Don't worry. I'll wash it again." It's strange, but I've never forgotten those little things. More importantly, this teacher was my key to God and Jesus Christ. I still think about her often, some 60 years later. One day she told me that she had to move away and wouldn't be coming back. That was a blow, and I was left shocked and sad at the same time.

## **My second teacher**

When I started my second year at school, we had a new teacher. I didn't get along with her as well. She wasn't as kind as my first teacher, but maybe I caused more trouble than in my first year. I don't remember any more. One thing has stayed with me, though. I was once looking for something in my desk and I'd placed the desk's lid on my head so that both of my hands would be free for the search. She probably called me and I didn't hear, or perhaps I just responded a little late. In any case, she suddenly slammed my head between the desk and its lid and pressed down quite hard. I didn't see who was responsible until I could finally pull out my head. I was angry and astonished that my teacher had done such a thing. You wouldn't have done that to a dead

donkey, I thought. It needs to be punished with a counterattack. I stood up and kicked her leg with my wooden shoes. She gave an awful cry, and I never had a good relationship with her from then on. She often sent me out to the corridor as a punishment, but when she came to call me back in, I'd of course long since gone home. My mother often had to face the school board because of me. (You can see the wooden shoes in the photo of me from back then).

His is what I looked like when I was eight years old - before I was separated from my parents by the authorities.

Hans Bieri, a boy in indenture, taken away from his family as a child and yet.....

<https://vimeo.com/768920850>



I moved away to start my third year at school. It wasn't because I'd turned the world upside down; moving away was what most siblings did at the time. It was the same for my brothers, and Ruedi, the eldest, went to live on a farm before I left. My parents were surviving, but it was just after the war. We were very poor



and just didn't have enough money. Leaving home like this was normal in Switzerland up until the '40s and '50s, and farmers looked for boys like us as cheap labourers who could be taken advantage of until we couldn't work any more. Back then, farmers were still kings. That certainly isn't the case today.

## Away from home

I left home on a beautiful, warm spring day and travelled alone on the train from Schüpfen to Brugg. Steam trains were still running at the time. A small, old suitcase rested on my knees. It had string tied around it as both of the buckles were broken, and I held onto it tightly with both hands so that no one could steal any of my meagre belongings. I stared out of the window with teary eyes, and not at anything in particular, but rather just into space. I was eight years old. What was about to come my way? Suddenly the train lurched and my numbness left in an instant. The train still had to make a few more stops before I needed to get off, right? Luckily, the conductor appeared in that very moment.

Someone picked me up at the station, but I no longer remember who it was. I was very downcast, so I just let everything wash over me. We drove to Studen, which was the village that was to be my new home for the next two and a half years. I'd never met the family who took me in, but they were my godparents. They had three children: One girl and two boys. My godmother was extremely kind, and she was also my aunt – my mother's sister. Nevertheless, she had more than enough to do with keeping the family afloat, and now I was there as well. They had a small farm, and three times each week they drove a horse and cart to the city of Biel. Here they sold fruits and vegetables that they'd prepared the night before. Their youngest son, my cousin, was one year younger than me. I think the elder of the two sons was seven years my senior. A year or two later, he began an apprenticeship as a mechanic. He was in Biel during the day, so

I only rarely saw him in the week. My other cousin, their daughter, was around five years older than me. She looked after me when things went badly, and she was a very sweet girl. I'm still grateful to her for that. She was really something special; when my life wasn't going well, I could lean on her and she'd support me.

## **I was nine years old**

I shared a bedroom upstairs with my cousin. I heard my godfather early each morning when he went to the barn to milk the cows. With time, I became used to this happening and it no longer woke me up.

I settled in well both at home and at school, but I really missed the genuine warmth and security of family life. I wasn't treated badly, but something was definitely missing.

I probably compensated for this gap by causing so much trouble. Barely a day passed when I didn't receive some sort of punishment at school, and I ended up getting a rough beating from the teacher every week. Such things are now in the past, thank God. The beatings didn't bother me, though. I swallowed them just as easily as a glass of water.

## **Cooking**

When my godparents went to Biel with their horse and cart and fruit and vegetables, I had to prepare lunch as soon as I came home from school. Instructions were dictated to me the night before, and they could include peeling potatoes, washing salad, slicing apples or any number of other things. When my godparents came home at around half-past twelve, my efforts meant that the actual cooking never took long.

I always thought cooking couldn't be as hard as people said. I'd already cut up the apples, so now all I had to do was light the wood furnace, put some water in the pan, add the apple slices and they'd be cooking soon after. Oh, but I've forgotten the

sugar! There's still time, though. I'll just measure out four or five soup-spoonfuls and quickly add them in.

After a while, I decided to try the apple slices. Oh God! They're so salty! And my godparents will be back home soon! I realised my mistake straight away, of course: I'd used salt instead of sugar. But what should I do now? An idea came to me like a lightning bolt: I'd wash the slices with fresh water and cook them again with sugar. I didn't know whether this would fix the mess. When my godparents came home, they praised me for already having cooked the apples. At dinner, I almost didn't dare to raise my head and look the others in the eyes – but washing the slices had helped, and everything went well. I'd been lucky. When I was praised again, though, I couldn't hold myself back any longer. I told them what had happened, and I can still hear the laughter in my ears today.

## The rats

We had lots of rats in the farmhouse, and many were as big as small cats. We could hear them especially well at night, as this was when they were out and searching for food. There were always black marks on the walls from where they'd done their rounds. Cold shivers run down my spine when I think back to how I caught rats and finished them off with a broom or shovel. How could I do that at only ten years old? I once had to fetch wooden boards from a shed, and when I picked up the first board, the entire floor suddenly became black. There were between 50 and 60 big rats around me, but I was so hardened to them that I didn't even call for help. I just made sure to leave the shed as fast as possible. I was also becoming cheekier at school. I was beaten up early one morning because, when one of my classmates came in with a black button on his jacket, I asked him if one of his rabbits had kicked the bucket. I only found out later that his grandfather had died. The beating seemed fair payback for such a stupid remark.

## In the field

My cousin and I once had to plough up a field. We always enjoyed doing this, as it was fun to see how the furrows lined up next to one another. He was in Year 4 and I was in Year 5. I don't know how we could plough when we were still so young. Max was a quiet horse, but the horse next to him was wilder. Max did almost everything by himself; when we reached the end of the field, he turned around and went back along the furrow without us giving him much instruction. All we had to do was turn the heavy iron plough above the ground until it turned over another furrow at the start of the field.

One day, we had everything set up so we could each sit at an end of the field and only have to stand up to turn the plough. The horses were excellent.

Not everything always went so well between us, and we'd often argue. My cousin wasn't really made to work, and I often had to put in most of the effort alone. He was also a year younger than me. But there were many great days when we got on well. In autumn, for example, the harvested sugar beets had to be taken to the station in Busswil. We were a good team then, and we always looked forward to loading the sugar beets onto the train. All the loading was done by hand, of course – whether loading in the field or loading onto the train.

## Almost to the youth prison

Time passed, and everything carried on as if according to a plan. I was happy, I was sad, and I was always enterprising – but I was still missing the warmth and security of real family life. I thought a lot about my first teacher, the lady who'd told me about God and Jesus. I prayed almost every evening if I didn't fall straight asleep from exhaustion. I caused a lot of trouble at school and at

home, but I always had the feeling that nothing could happen to me because I had God and Jesus Christ, and they'd never left me alone. I was threatened with the Young Offenders' Institution on an almost daily basis, but I always came out of sticky situations in one piece.

On one occasion, my aunt was looking for the kneading trough. The trough was made of pieces of wood that had been glued together, and she used it for one evening each fortnight to mix dough that she'd then bake into bread the next day. But on this evening, the trough was nowhere to be found. What had happened?

It'd be fun to be a ship's captain at least once, I thought. The Sägebach stream meandered through meadows and fields about 200 metres away from our house. There wasn't normally a lot of water flowing in it, but one evening, there was a heavy storm. The stream flooded, and it became the perfect time for a boat trip. I loaded the trough onto a cart and snuck away from the farmhouse. Thunder and lightning didn't put me off; being a captain was a big deal! There were shrubs on both sides of the stream. My ship was soon afloat, even in spite of the water's raging. I'd brought a stick to help with balance, but the moment I moved off, I quickly realised that the whole undertaking was extremely unstable. The inevitable happened, but I was able to grab onto a branch and pull myself ashore. I've just escaped drowning, I thought – but the kneading trough had disappeared. It was a while before bread was going to be baked, but I naturally confessed when the time came around; I was honest back then. I still had to endure a good scolding from my aunt, however, who insisted that I could have drowned. I eventually found the trough a kilometre downstream where it had become stuck in the bushes.

I always had my boys around me, and they were very happy to help me out and take instructions whenever I hatched a plan. I normally spent Sundays with them in the nearby gravel pit

where there were trolleys and tracks that were used for transporting the gravel. One time, I decided we should remove the bumper stop at the end of a track and push two or three trolleys over the edge of the gravel pile and down the sheer, 30 metre-high drop. The daring feat eventually made its way before the school board, and I was threatened with the Young Offenders' Institution once again.

One rainy day, the whole farmhouse became incredibly bright for a second. You couldn't do anything in the field in that kind of weather, so I was bored and in the workshop. This was where a variety of old things were kept: Keys, cables, screws, nails, light bulbs etc. From nowhere, I thought it'd be interesting to be an electrician. With scarcely a further thought, I set to work. I tied electrical cables together, one after another, making about 30 metres in total. At one end I attached a plug, and at the other end I attached a light bulb. I took the part of the cable that was connected to the light bulb and climbed up the hayloft. When I reached the roof, I tied the cable to a beam – planning to light up the haystack and the straw. Then I climbed back down and looked for a plug on the barn floor so that I could put the whole system into action. An electrician's life isn't half bad, I thought, as I placed the plug into the socket.

What happened next seemed like the end of the world. First there was a terrible bang, and then a flash went through the whole house. Everyone came running out, thinking that the house had caught alight. I was hiding, but I heard what they said and how they cursed. They were suspicious that I might have been involved, and they called for me straight away. All I could think of was how should happy they should be that the house hadn't burnt down. I no longer remember what punishment I was given. Time passed, and I was now in Year 6. For some reason I'd received yet another beating, and I abruptly decided to leave Studen and march to Wahlendorf. This was where my parents

were, and I hadn't seen them in a long while. When I approached Lyss, my aunt was behind me on her bicycle. I went back, and for a long time everything was quiet. It was time to start on a new project.

The time finally arrived on a beautiful autumn evening. Three of my friends were with me, I had a 10 metre-long wire rope, and dusk had almost finished falling. As always, I gave the command: Tanks are attacking, and we need to block Bütigen Street with the wire! We tied the wire to an iron post on one side of the street and to a wooden telephone pole at the other side. It was now stretched quite tightly over the entire street at about 50 cm above the ground. Time to take cover! My boys obeyed my every word. In the distance we saw two lights fast approaching. It wasn't a tank, of course, but that wasn't important; stopping anything passing was the name of the game. The car drove straight into the cable and screeched, rattled and cracked. My boys were no longer anywhere to be seen, but the command had been accomplished: The tank had been stopped.

One thing I still remember from my last prank in Studen is that the car had just been given a new coat of paint. That was enough to make this my final escapade.

## **Wahlendorf, my old home**

I was suddenly back in Wahlendorf with my parents, but only for a few weeks. The people of Studen had probably had enough of me.

## **The little house lost**

My parents could no longer pay the interest on our house's mortgage, so we lost the house to the bank.

My father found a job as a milker on a farm in Jeuss bei Murten, and my parents thought that we'd now all be able to be together. Only my brother Walter was still away from home. We were

probably exploited by our new farmer, but in any case, everything went wrong. My mother wasn't prepared to put up with it all, and rows occurred on a daily basis. I was the smartest student in Year 5, but only because I was the only one in the class. The whole school, with all 10 of its year groups and 19 students, was taught in a single room. I'd often received beatings from the teacher in Studen, but no one would believe what happened in this new school. It wasn't unusual for the teacher to beat the older boys half to death with his fists. The children in the younger classes had to watch this happen. The classroom was filled with so much crying and shouting that it was almost unbearable, and I was used to a lot.

We boys had to wake up each morning at half-past four to muck out the whole barn and feed the cows before school. We had to look after around 40 cows. My brother Ruedi was in Year 8, Ueli was in Year 3, and I was in Year 6.

On one occasion, I'd cleaned a huge terrace with a broom. It probably wasn't clean enough, because the farmer came and hit me around the ear a few times with a wet manure sack until I fell crying to the floor. I'll get you back for that before I leave here, I thought. It was winter, so none of the machinery or equipment was being used. I made it my job to deliver the farmer his just desserts. I peed in the fuel tanks of the tractors and motorised mowers, cut important cables and water pipes, and ruined anything else that came into my head. In any case, the matter was settled.

Another thing that I've never forgotten about our time with this farmer: In the February of 1956, the temperature plummeted to at least minus 20 Celsius. Lake Murten wasn't far away, and it froze over so much that we could cycle on it.

My parents left Jeuss in the spring of 1956 and moved to Nenningkofen in the canton of Solothurn.



## The inhuman farmer

I began Year 7 with another farmer, but this time in Lüterkofen in Solothurn.

It was especially hard to keep on changing schools. I was often beaten up by my fellow students, and there were regularly three or four of them hitting me at once. They couldn't floor me if they tried alone, as all the work I did had given me a hellish strength. The teachers were never on my side, as I was only a hired farm hand. As they saw it, the students could do whatever they liked to me.

One thing that did give me great pleasure, though, was Grenchen Airfield. I always had four or five hours free each Sunday afternoon, and I used the time to cycle to the airfield. If I saw a plane in the sky on the way, everything around me faded into the distance. When I reached the airfield, I was transported to a completely different world. It was fantastic to see the planes as they took off and landed. Time always passed like lighting before I eventually had to return to the farm and work in the barn.

On beautiful summer evenings, I snuck away from the farmhouse and made my way to the edge of the nearby forest. This was where my deer were. I lay in wait in the bushes, because I knew that when the sun went down, the deer would come out of the forest and graze busily on the lush grass. I always watched them for a long while as they grazed clump after clump – and I could forget everything miserable for at least half an hour, or maybe even for a full hour if I was lucky. I lay on the edge of the forest, and after a while, the deer were gone. The stars glistened ever more brightly against the darkening sky, and I often looked up to heaven where my dear God and Jesus had to be. They were so far away, but at the same time very close; I felt that very strongly. When I was incredibly sad and alone somewhere and I prayed, I knew for certain that God existed.

As I'm writing these words, it's 00:42 on 16th April, 2012. In December, I'll be 68 years old. There's one thing that I want to tell you all at this point, and I've already included it at the start of this book. I was in my first year of school when my teacher told me about God and Jesus, and since that moment, I've never, ever doubted in God and Jesus Christ. It'll stay that way until I stand at heaven's narrow door and knock against it. Our lives are like lights, flashing for an instant before they disappear. We'll all stand at heaven's door and knock; I'm praying with all of my heart that when I knock, the door opens.

The farmer was a crazy, misanthropic brute. At 5 o'clock every morning before school, I had to fetch two big baskets full of turnips from the cellar and carry them up to the barn floor for the cows. The turnips were extremely heavy, but I did what I had to do. One day I noticed that I had a huge hernia on my left-hand side. It was dangerous to continue carrying such heavy weights. In bed at night the hernia was hardly visible, but as soon as I had to do strenuous work, it stuck out prominently. I told the farmer, but as I was explaining the situation, a thunderstorm began and large hailstones started to fall. He roared at me like a grizzly bear and said: "You damned swine! You can have this hernia operated on when you're with the next farmer, but it's never going to happen while you're with me." Similar attacks happened almost every day, but I always put them behind me. I can say for certain that all of this took place in 1956, as it was at the same time as the Hungarian Uprising, that was bloodily crushed by the Russians. Nevertheless, my time with this farmer was almost at an end.

## **I was in 7th grade**

My parents lived in Worben, and my father worked as a milker at a tree nursery that also had a farm. We were all together there

for a short time. I was taken to Aarberg Hospital for an operation on my hernia.

We worked in the tree nursery when we weren't in school. We received 50 Rappen an hour, which was far too little for such hard work in the field.

My brother and I compensated ourselves for the injustice when we picked potatoes by always throwing the biggest and best potatoes into the nearby stream. At night, we also snuck into the strawberry fields and filled our stomachs with the fruits.

I've never forgotten one time when I had to help the boss to spray the trees with pesticide. The tank was held on a tractor, and I had to wander about with the hose. When we were near to the office, the telephone rang. The boss went into the office but he left the tractor's engine running. This meant that there was still pressure in the pipe. My time had come, and with a full hose, I covered the young trees. It felt incredible, but I hadn't counted on the boss returning. I suddenly felt a terrible whack on the side of my head; I don't remember whether he did it with his palm or his fist, but I span around twice in the air before falling to the ground.

I also had a scientific streak – or at least convinced myself that I did – because I remember once lying on a grass cart with my brother to watch a lunar eclipse. I was never taught in school why the moon waxes and wanes or why solar and lunar eclipses occur. I'd only find answers to these mysteries later in life. In truth, I really don't know what I learnt in school other than how to read and write. Much of what I know today I picked up by myself. I was nevertheless still interested in what happened with the moon, and I kept on trying scientific experiments.

It was eventually time to move on. This always came around quickly, and all of a sudden I was gone.

## Still in 7th grade, but a new farmer in Höchstetten

I'd made myself a burden and was picked up by a new farmer. We drove through the Limpach Valley until we finally arrived at Höchstetten – my new home.

I shared a bedroom with another farmhand. He wasn't quite normal, but who was otherwise very kind. The bedroom couldn't be heated in winter, so when it was minus 10 degrees Celsius outside, the thermometer in our room showed the same temperature.

I have to say: The farmer and his family were really very nice to me. He had three children, and we all got along very well together. You could say that everything was hunky dory, but I was still missing something.

Older students often beat me up in school and on the way home, so I looked for a way to defend myself. One night, I broke into the shooting club building and stole about 200 empty cartridges. I then found a wooden board with a tongue-and-groove edge somewhere on the farm – but I only needed the groove. I sawed the board apart until it exactly matched my requirements, and then I nailed another small board to the front so I had something that almost looked like a crossbow. Now all I needed was a trigger mechanism. I took a bicycle inner tube and cut it into about 20 rings with a pair of scissors. I then tied these rings together and fastened them to the smaller board. A trigger guard was knocked up in moments. I could add considerable tension to the crossbow, and this was necessary for firing multiple shots. I now laid ten cartridges on the board where the groove was, and the first test fire was ready. I pulled the trigger and a buzz ran through the air. When I went to check the result, the cartridges had travelled 20 metres and all landed within a roughly two metre-wide spread. This was more than I could have expected, and everything was ready for action.

I set myself up in some tall hay at the side of a road and watched the older boys who always beat me up. My scrap crossbow was

loaded. They wanted to start on me as soon as they saw me, but I told them that if I were them, I wouldn't try it. It was no use, and a few seconds later, I pulled the trigger. Ten cartridges flew through the air and went straight towards the damned swines. The boys scattered in all directions, as they'd all been hit by at least one shot. There were other fights, but I started waiting to catch them alone. They slowly but surely began to respect me – or rather fear me. In any case, I had at least one day in peace. Bleienbach Airfield wasn't too far away, so I often cycled there and marvelled at the planes.

Time passed, and I eventually began Year 9.

## **A year in Obersteckholz, from 1958 until the spring of 1959**

It was that time again; the next farmer came and picked me up in his car. It was 1958, and Pope Pius XII died in the autumn of this year. I don't know why, but I remembered special events.

The farmer had a very nice family. There were three girls who were four, six and seven years old. The farmer was a Sergeant Major in the National Reserve, and I looked at him in amazement every time he wore the uniform and went on duty.

I enjoyed working with the horses out in the field. It was hard work, but I was treated well. In school, I had no more problems with my fellow students, and I even stopped doing the nasty things that I'd previously done to others. As I say, I liked it in this farming family. I always had enough to eat, and everything was good. All of the work naturally gave me a strong appetite, and I have vivid memories of sneaking into the storeroom where smoked sausages were hung up in neat lines. I pulled down and ate many of these sausages over a fair few nights, spreading the rest out on the pole so nicely that no one ever realised that any were missing.

So all was well, except in my heart. The family had a bath in the house, and I could always hear when the girls bathed and had

fun. I was allowed to fetch a bowl full of warm water each day and wash myself out in the barn with the cows. There was nothing wrong with this since I was only a hired farm boy, but it pained my little heart rather a lot.

Moments like this were triggers for when I once went out in the middle of the night, sat under a tree, leant against the trunk, and cried. I looked up at the stars and thought how very far away heaven and my dear God must be. But at the same time, I also felt that God was very close to me. He wrapped me up in his arms, and without saying a word, he told me not to worry, as everything would be okay with him. I gradually became tired, snuck back into my bed, and slept peacefully.

Many years have passed since that day, but my attitude to God and Jesus Christ has never changed. I've never doubted in God – not even for a single day.

In Year 9 I took my final school exams and received As in every subject. I liked going to school, as it meant that I had to do less work on the farm.

I don't know how it happened, but after the exams, I suddenly found myself with another farmer in the canton of Lucerne. I didn't have to go back to school for Year 9, as children in Lucerne only went to school for eight years.

## **With a Catholic farming family in Pfaffnau in the canton of Lucerne**

This was the last farm that I worked on as a hired labourer, and it was also the best. I really liked it here. I didn't have to go to school anymore, and although I was only employed as a farm hand, everyone was very good to me. It was a large family with at least eight children, the youngest of whom was only one year old. I always had a big appetite because of the work, but I never went hungry. My days started at half-past four each morning. Breakfast was at seven, and they always cooked the best hash browns that I've ever tasted. We had a snack at half-past eight

and another at ten. Lunch was at twelve, and we had more snacks at three and five. The snacks always consisted of homemade bread, sausage, cheese, cider or tea. Dinner was at eight, and every day followed more or less the same pattern. We ate like kings, but we also had to work hard. The farmer had 18 dairy cows in the barn that had to be milked every morning and evening. There weren't milking machines in 1959 – or at least we didn't have any – so the milking had to be done by hand. I always did the milking with the farmer's brother. The brother was an alcoholic and often wasn't in a fit state to do the milking. He'd lie on a bale of straw in the middle of the barn and wouldn't budge, so when the farmer wasn't at home, I'd have to milk all of the cows by myself. The farmer wasn't always there because he also acted as a magistrate.

The best thing for me was the farmer's huge Hürlimann tractor. Barely a day went by when I wasn't out and about on it. I was known across the village as the best tractor driver for miles around.

I always spent my lunch breaks messing around in the workshop. I made all sorts of planes, rockets and other curiosities. I also did drawings, and this was when I found out why the moon waxes and wanes and how solar and lunar eclipses occur. The family was Catholic and went to Church each morning, evening and weekend. They also prayed before each meal and said a few Ave Marias each night. I knew almost all of the prayers by heart, but as I'd been raised a Calvinist, I always just sat silently when they said them. I sensed that they thought I had absolutely no chance of getting into heaven. They once even asked me if I knew the Our Father, and they were astounded when I did. The family's evening prayers took a long while and the children also had to participate in them. The two boys were in Years 4 and 5, and I noticed that they often laughed, messed around or pulled faces instead of really praying. This was too much for their 80 year-old grandfather, and when

he noticed what they were doing, he would often whack their heads so hard that they almost fell off their chairs.

When incidents like this were over, the praying continued without any further interruptions. Even the boys took part sincerely.

Finally, at the age of 15, my days as a hired farm hand were at an end.

## **And so I had to start an apprenticeship**

Back then, every boy wanted to become a car mechanic. I naturally wanted the same. I was invited to an aptitude test in Langenthal, and when I arrived, I had to file a piece of iron for about an hour. Suddenly the boss came around and asked me to work out one-and-a-half thirds of 1,000. I wasn't bad at fractions, but I didn't spend long enough on the question and didn't give the right answer. He told me to put the file on the bench and go home; I wasn't cut out to be a car mechanic. This is how my first major career came to an end.

I eventually managed to find a position as a bricklayer's apprentice in Biel. It was with my cousin who owned a small construction business.

I'd never considered this job before and I was depressed about accepting it. Nevertheless, the whole apprenticeship turned out to be interesting and instructive, and I actually had quite a good time. I received good grades for my work both in the vocational college and on the building sites. On one occasion, we were building apartment blocks in Nyon and all the apartments had identical floor plans. The Italians on the site were the fastest bricklayers, so I often raced against them for a crate of beer. We all worked on the same size of wall with the same corners, numbers of doors etc. Ready, steady, go! I can proudly say that I never lost one of these bricklaying contests. I was so fast, in fact, that I always had to keep a bowl of water nearby to cool down the trowel when it became red hot! Ha ha ha. I was in the



third year of my apprenticeship when we built the apartment blocks in Nyon. I had to take the train home every Wednesday evening so that I could make it to the vocational college in Biel the next morning. I went straight back to Nyon on Thursday evenings. I initially had a room in a woman's house that was roughly 100 metres away from the building site. The woman had a daughter who was about 17 years old, and I was given her room. I only stayed here until we'd set up our own accommodation block a month or so later. I came back late from Biel one Thursday evening while I was still at the woman's house. I didn't want to wake anyone up, so I went to my room without making a sound and then didn't use any light to undress. I slipped into bed, and just seconds after noticing how nice and warm it seemed, I felt a body next to me. A loud scream filled the room, and I knew straight away that it was the landlady's daughter. She jumped out of the bed and disappeared. It was all a misunderstanding, as she'd thought that I was away on holiday. I still have to smile when I think back on the whole situation. It didn't do me any harm.

I hadn't pulled any dangerous pranks since I was in Years 4 and 5, but I started again while I was in Nyon. I always received money from the foreman to buy my train ticket, but I never did this, and instead used the cash as extra pocket money. I never had a ticket when the conductor came around, but I didn't need one; I stayed in the toilet and stood on top of the toilet bowl behind the toilet door. The conductor always opened the door until it touched the bowl, but he never looked behind and I was never found out. You just needed strong nerves. I did this for a few weeks until I decided that enough was enough. Maybe I was thinking of the Swiss proverb 'You can use a jug to fetch water, but only until the jug breaks,' which means that you can't get away with anything forever. This was also the last prank that could have gone wrong, because I didn't have time for games any more. I thought more and more about flying every day, and

it wasn't long before I'd firmly decided to become a professional pilot.

## **The dream of flying comes closer**

I often thought about flying during my time as a hired farm hand, and now I was very close to realising my goal. I also had more money available. I went to Grenchen Airfield whenever I could on Saturdays and Sundays, and whenever I managed to save up a few Francs, I took a short sightseeing flight to satisfy my enthusiasm and curiosity for the skies.

Eventually my 18th birthday came around and I had enough money to sign up for gliding school. I chose to fly gliders because they were cheaper to fly than powered planes.

The Swiss Government paid all the costs for young people who passed pre-flight training. I'd never been to secondary school, so I didn't meet the entry requirements for this programme and wasn't even allowed to sit the pre-flight examination.

People occasionally said stupid things to me like: "You've never been to secondary school and you want to be a pilot? That's laughable." All I thought was: I'll show you.

I still have to smile when I think back to all the things I considered doing to reach my goal of becoming a professional pilot.

I once read an advertisement from the German Air Force in a German newspaper. They wanted young men to apply to become military pilots, and I sent off a written application straight away. The Germans wrote a very nice letter back saying that since I was Swiss, I wasn't eligible to join the German military.

## **Building work, earning money and flying**

I worked as a machine operator on building sites for about five years after my apprenticeship ended. I mostly worked with cranes, but I also handled wheel loaders, crawler loaders and

excavators. I set up my flight office at the top of my cranes and swotted up on aviation theory when I didn't have anything to move. There was a lot to learn, and the theory exams were tough.

I'd like to say at this point that I passed quite a few exams as a pilot without ever messing up. I'm really proud of this record, as I only went to primary school for eight years.

At 14:42 on 2nd June, 1963, I sat in a Rhönlerche glider alongside my flight instructor, Stähli, and began my first glider flight.

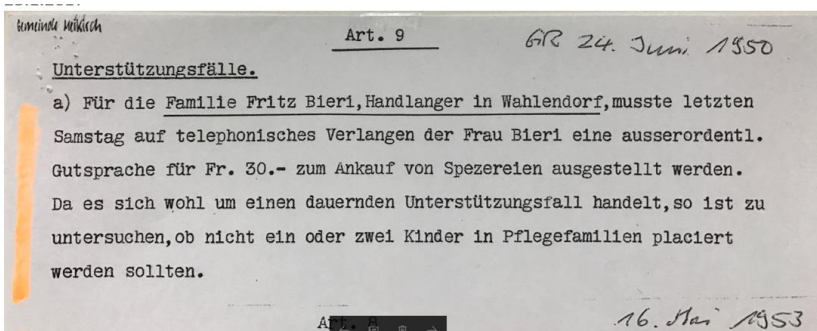
I wrote in my flight log: 'Successfully passed official glider license examination, Grenchen, 8th August, 1964, Examiner: K. Stuber.'

I learnt how to fly without an engine – even high up in the Jura mountains and further away – and then to land precisely back on the airfield. I think every pilot should have to learn and master gliding before they switch to powered flight. It should be part of every pilot's basic training.

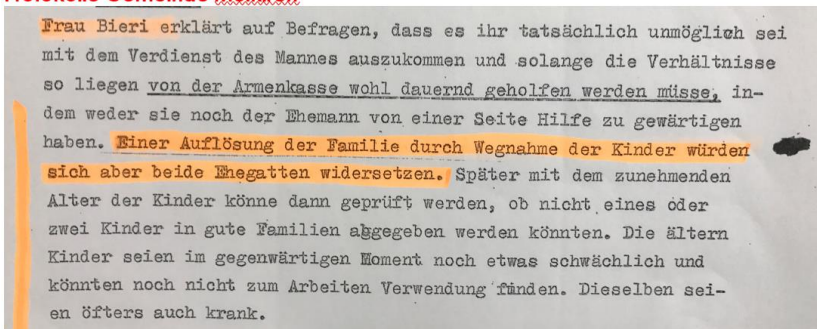


In 2015, I wanted to know who was responsible for my brothers and me being hired out.

I contacted the State Archives, State Chancellery of the Canton of Bern. The following was sent to me:



#### Protokolle Gemeinde Melkirch



Pass Me Not, O Gentle Saviour The Martens Sisters  
<https://youtu.be/YprTtphCD4Q>

## Grenchen Flight School, Switzerland

My glider training was extremely difficult. The techniques and the theory were fine; I'd known these planes since I was four

years old. No, the main problem was the weather. I'd turn up at the airfield on many Saturdays and Sundays and not be able to fly. The planes had been prepared and taken out of the hangar, but rain started to approach and they'd have to be taken back under cover. When the sun started to shine, we'd bring the planes out again. It would now be about four o'clock, which is when my flight instructor told me all the pros would be up in the air. Suddenly the sky would turn black, and since it looked like rain, all of the planes would be put back in the hangar. It didn't look good, so we'd call it a day. My flight instructor would tell me not to worry, as it'd all work out next time. I returned home from the airfield on many, many occasions without having flown. That was always extremely hard.

I counted up my minutes of flying time until I was able to make my first solo flight. It happened after four hours and twenty minutes. It was a beautiful and magnificent feeling to be so high up in the sky and so totally alone – so near to God and Jesus Christ. I've never forgotten who looked after me during those moments, even when my focus had to be on the flight.

### **My brother Ueli still laughs about this today**

It was at this time, right at the beginning of the '60s, that I read books by Jules Verne. I was always interested in new and undiscovered things, and I often carried out experiments like before; I wanted to prove whether the ideas that I had were correct. It must be possible, I once thought, to combine the sun's rays into a single beam and project them forwards. As I was a bricklayer, I used plaster to make myself an oval bowl that was roughly one metre in diameter. I then found a mirror and broke it up into small pieces with a hammer. Each piece was about the size of a five-Franc coin. Next, I glued the pieces of mirror into the plastered bowl until the inside of the bowl had been completely covered. Now all I had to do was go outside and point the bowl straight at the sun. I thought that it'd be fantastic

if I could combine the sun's rays and steer the new, single, hundred-degree hotter ray into the distance. The experiment didn't really work out, but solar cookers did come onto the market some two or three years later – and they used oval bowls, just like I'd anticipated.

My brother Ueli and me during a thirst-inducing wedding celebration



In another experiment, I wanted to know if a balloon would still rise in a vacuum. If it did, you could theoretically use a balloon to fly to the moon!

I needed a vacuum and something gaseous. I bought six glass sheets to make a vacuum box – four that were 50 centimetres wide by 100 centimetres tall for the walls, and two that were 52 centimetres by 52 centimetres for the lid and base. I then glued all of the sheets together, apart from the lid. Before I did the gluing, I placed a few candles on the base sheet. I was working on the principle that smoke is similar to gas, because smoke rises up slowly when there's a fire. But what would happen in a vacuum? I lit all the candles and glued down the lid so that the box was totally airtight. When the candles burnt, they should use up the oxygen – and so the air. It worked exactly like I'd anticipated. After about ten minutes, the candles' flames grew smaller and smaller until they finally all went out at once. Since the candles were no longer lit, all of the air in the box must have been used up. As soon as the flames went out, every candle started to produce smoke. This smoke shot upwards like a bolt of lightning until it crashed into the box's lid. I was astounded at this, but it made everything clear: A balloon does rise in a vacuum, and it even rises more quickly than it would otherwise! I was ready to take a balloon up to the moon!

## Starting with powered flight

At 14:45 on 30th December, 1964, I began my first powered flight alongside my flight instructor, Schäfer. We landed at 15:31.

I wrote in my flight log: 'Successfully passed private pilot's license examination on 10th July, 1965,  
Examiner: Eggimann.'





### Grenchen Flight School, Switzerland

I subsequently moved from Grenchen Airfield to Biel Airfield where I joined the local Aero Club. The club had a Bücker for aerobatics, and I signed up to make use of this straight away. I only needed a total of 6 hours and 11 minutes to get my aerobatics license – including all of the retraining, aerobatics training and examination flights. By comparison, someone told me that Swissair pilots needed an average of 14 hours in the Bücker to get their license. When I finished my examination flight, the examiner told me that I'd be the Swiss aerobatics champion in the future. The Bücker was unfortunately often rented out to Swissair, so I could only use this wonderful aircraft from time to time.

As I've already said, I earned the money for flying from construction work. I sometimes had to wait until I'd saved up enough to continue my training.



I passed my aerobatics examination in a Bücker biplane on  
28th September, 1965.

This photo appears on the cover of my book. The owner of this Bücker,  
Paul Zeltner, flies in the Swiss Bücker Squadron.

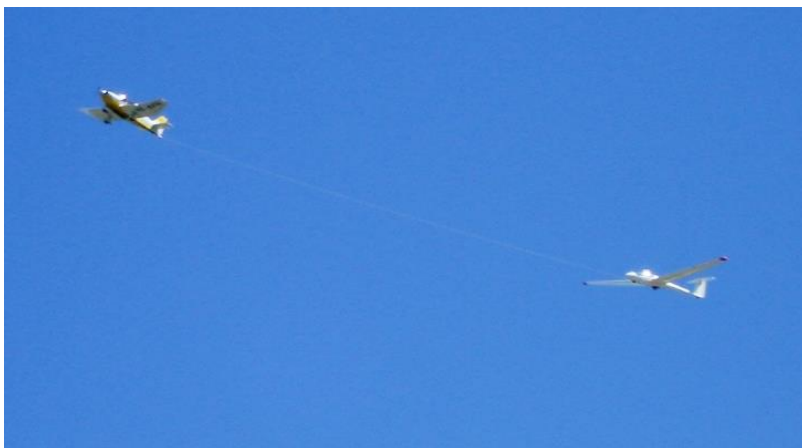


On the 10th October, 1965, I completed my retraining in a  
four-seater passenger plane.



Grenchen Flight School, Switzerland

On 24th April, 1966, I completed my training as a tow pilot.  
My flight instructor at the time flew Mirage jets.



On 7th February, 1967, I received my radiotelephony license.  
Pilots use radiotelephony to communicate in  
English across the world.

## **A near-fatal flight**

When the airfield in Biel closed, we moved the aircraft to Worben/Kappelen. This became our airfield from 1966. At this time I was also flying as a glider tow pilot at the airfields in Grenchen and Courtelary. This work allowed me to fly the hours that I needed to renew my licenses free of charge.

I was at the airfield in Worben on one hot summer day in 1966 when a fellow pilot asked me to take a short flight with him. He had a private pilot's license, but he hadn't flown for a few weeks. I naturally accepted, and I sat in the front of the two-seater Piper L4. The front control column was normally removed for passenger flights, as the pilot sat behind – but I also had a control column in my front seat. The other pilot was in command and

controlled the plane as we set off. I was confident that he hadn't forgotten how to fly, and the engine roared as he fully opened up the throttle. I looked left out of the window and waved laughingly at the onlookers who were standing at the runway's edge. Then I refocused on my task, as the other pilot had asked me to keep an eye on him and monitor the flight. When I looked at the instrument panel, the speedometer was in the red zone. This meant that we'd soon start falling. The speedometer would normally give a reading above the red zone at this point during a flight; travelling faster would reduce the risk of falling. Why was he flying so slowly? I immediately recognised why the speedometer was in the red zone when I looked out of the window. The road from Worben to Lyss ran along the end of the runway, and about 30 metres further on, a set of power lines ran right across a field. The pilot was doing everything he could to fly over these cables, and his constant pulling back on the control stick was also constantly reducing our speed. But why did he have so little speed in the first place? This became clear later on. First, the very hot weather had taken away some of the engine's power. Second, the unmown grass on the runway had slowed the plane down as it took off. The third point related to a pre-flight check that ensures that the carburettor isn't iced up. To do this check, the pilot runs the engine and then pulls a lever to open access to the carburettor. If the carburettor isn't iced up, the engine's number of revolutions per minute will decrease. However, a decrease in engine revolutions also means a decrease in engine power, so it's crucial to put the lever back into its original position when the check has been completed. This is what the pilot had forgotten to do. These three issues caused the plane to have far less speed than usual.

I knew straight away that we'd both be dead in the next few seconds if I let the pilot carry on. Our low engine power would have caused us to fly straight into the power lines, giving us a one-way ticket to heaven in a terrible fireball.

Everything now happened in a flash. I roared to the pilot over the engine noise: "I'm flying! Let go of the stick!" There was only one option: We'd have to go under the cables.

This wouldn't have been too much of a problem, but directly in front of us was one of the wooden poles used to support the power cables. I could also only go under the cables on the left side, as there was a small wood to the right. I performed a knife-edge manoeuvre so that the plane's wings were vertical from the ground, and then I pulled back hard on the control stick to move us away from the pole. Everything was looking good, but the knife-edge manoeuvre meant that the wings were now set to collide with the place-name sign that was situated at the side of the road. Back then, these signs were made of concrete. Our left wingtip clipped the sign with a dull thud and we immediately lost about half a metre from our normal wingspan. Now we had to go under the cables. We couldn't do this in the knife-edge position, as the cables were too low even for our newly reduced wingspan. I pulled right on the control stick until we levelled out and could finally pass. I had to be careful not to clip the cables with the right wing, but overall, the manoeuvre went well. There was grassland behind the cables, and I immediately used it to make an emergency landing. As soon as we came to a stop, the other pilot got out of the plane, shook my hand, and said: "Bieri, you did absolutely the right thing! I wanted to fly over the cables, so we'd be dead if you hadn't taken over. Thank you, from the bottom of my heart!"

I'll say this about the incident: I'd passed my aerobatics examination just before it occurred, and that was an unquestionably immense help. I was also a glider tow pilot at the time, and when I went to lunch one Saturday morning after I'd towed a glider up over the Juras, I found out that another pilot had been involved in a fatal accident. He'd tried to fly over some power cables during an off-field landing but had lost speed, flown straight into them, and been killed on impact. This tragic

accident left a mark on me, and I decided that if I was ever in a similar situation, I'd be sure to fly under the cables!

I must have subconsciously remembered my aerobatics training and the other pilot's accident during our incident; when the time came, there wasn't a second to spare.

1967 otherwise carried on quite normally. I still operated machines on building sites, often took friends and relatives on sightseeing flights around the Alps, and carried on working as a glider tow pilot in the Juras.

I'd also been going to the cinema regularly since I'd finished school. I'd sometimes see up to 15 films a week when the weather was so bad that I couldn't fly. This was my way of getting to know the world, but it wasn't long before I developed wanderlust and wanted to see the real world with my own eyes. I'd been curious about strange people and places for a long time, and now it seemed like the whole world could finally be within my reach.

My favourite poem from Year 5 comes to mind:



## Siegfried's Sword

The proud young Siegfried longed to roam;  
To flee from his father's castle home.  
In his father's house he would not stay,  
But would travel the world and go far away.  
There he met many a worthy knight  
With glittering shield and broadsword bright.  
Though a stick was all that Siegfried bore,  
Which made his spirit grow ever sore.  
But as he went through a darkened wood,  
He came across where a smithy stood.  
Plenty of iron and steel was there;  
The fire was blazing in the air.  
"Good master, listen now to me,  
And let me your apprentice be;  
And teach me how with skill and care  
They do the good broadswords prepare."  
Young Siegfried swung the hammer round,  
And drove the anvil to the ground.  
He hammered until the forest rang,  
And all the iron in pieces sprang.  
From the final bar of iron he made  
A good broadsword; a gleaming blade.  
"Now have I forged a broadsword bright,  
I may match at last the bravest knight.  
Now may I slay, like a hero brave,  
Giants and dragons in field and cave!"

by Ludwig Uhland

## Emigrating to Canada

Early in January, 1967, I found myself in the old post office restaurant opposite the train station in Lyss with my friend, Hans Hirt. We were working there, breaking down brick walls with sledgehammers because the restaurant was being renovated.

There was snow outside and the streets were covered in slush. It was horrible weather. Hans was three years younger than me, and as we sat on crates to eat our morning snack, we chatted about travelling and the big, wide world. Out of nowhere, I came up with the idea that we should both emigrate to Canada. Back at school in Studen, I spent Year 4, Year 5 and part of Year 6 sharing a desk with a boy who moved to Canada as soon as he left school. Now, in 2012, I'm still in touch with him via email. Hans and I encouraged one another with talk of how and when we'd make it to Canada, and by the time our break was over, we'd shaken hands and agreed to move at the earliest opportunity.

With the decision made, we sent off for the relevant paperwork from the Canadian Consulate. Our excitement grew constantly and we did everything we could to learn about this beautiful country on paper. There were still a few issues to sort out with the Consulate, and we had to swot up on English every single day. We also mentioned our plans at home and to our friends and other relatives, but they only laughed and didn't take us seriously at all. Things were different back then from how they are now. Young people today are often financially supported by their parents, and flying 'across the pond' is also much cheaper than it was before. Even if we both had a few doubts, we were 100 per cent sure that we'd emigrate and that we'd do it at any price. We were too excited to forget the whole thing, and we never deviated from our plans. We had to visit the Consulate in Bern for a medical examination, but a few days later we received letters that contained our Canadian immigration visas. Our happiness was indescribable.

### **1st April, 1968**

The weather was beautiful and the sun shone warmly down on the meadows as they started to turn green. We'd packed our bags and each had 1,200 Francs in our pockets. It was time to say

goodbye to those we left behind; who knew whether we'd ever see one another again? No one was laughing at us anymore, and tears were flowing down our mothers' cheeks.

We took the train bound for Kloten and got off at the airport. Just a short while later we were sat in a Canadian DC8 at 32,000 feet and heading towards Canada. We landed in Montreal in the late afternoon. We told the taxi driver to take us downtown and drop us off somewhere in the city centre. We were amazed by how much there was to see in this cosmopolitan city, but the exhaust fumes from the cars were almost unbearable. We'd soon found a hotel, or rather a dosshouse, for the night. It was important that we managed our money well, as we didn't have much and also didn't have any work.

We started our job search the next morning. It might still be the same now, but back then, you couldn't just go to a company and get a job. Instead, you had to look for work through the Employment Office. We were both qualified bricklayers, but our qualifications weren't recognised in Canada. We wanted to take every job that came up, but the answer was always the same: There's no job available. French is spoken in eastern Canada, and Hans spoke fluent French because his mother grew up in the French part of Switzerland. Nevertheless, he had great difficulty in understanding the pidgin version of French that the Canadians used.

We bought train tickets and headed for Toronto the next day. The weather was still very cold and the earth and every lake were frozen solid.

We had exactly the same luck in Toronto: No jobs available.

We carried on travelling west with the Canadian Pacific Railway, and the next city we came to was Winnipeg. Our money was slowly but surely running out, and we both only had 80 dollars to our names. If we didn't find work in Winnipeg, we'd be forced to fly back to Switzerland. We didn't want to give the people back home this pleasure, as they were then sure



to really laugh at us. They'd be right to laugh, as well; we'd been quite boastful about the emigration before we left. Our plan was clear: If we didn't find work, we'd use the rest of our money to buy a hunting rifle and then we'd head north, build ourselves a cabin, and live as they did a hundred years ago until we found jobs.

We'd been on the train for days, and about half an hour before we reached Winnipeg, we started looking around the train for something to eat. During the search we came across a newspaper on the floor and took it with us. When we returned to our places, we searched through the jobs section. Just as we were about to give up, we came across the following advertisement: 'We're looking for handymen for our plastering construction business.' It was all in English, of course, but we could read and speak fairly well. We arrived in Winnipeg late in the evening and were lucky to find a place for the night right opposite the train station. We went to the Employment Office first thing the next morning and brought along the advertisement. We didn't have much hope as the listing was already a few days old and Canada had many unemployed people.

Just as in Montreal and Toronto, the queue at the Employment Office stretched well into the street. The man that we saw looked carefully at our papers and then made a telephone call to the contractor in the advertisement. When he hung up, he told us that we'd got the jobs and could begin the next morning at seven o'clock. We immediately looked through another newspaper to find a room, and we eventually found one at 563 Victor St., Winnipeg, Manitoba. Three old women lived there; they were all sisters who'd fled to Canada from Poland at the end of the war.

The next morning, we went to the agreed-upon place and met our employer, Mr. Wagner. He was German. We knew why the positions had become free by the same evening: We had to spend the whole day hauling plaster up to the sixth floor. It was

extremely hard work, but we were used to similar tasks and were as strong as bulls. We were also really happy to have work at all. Mr. Wagner was very pleased with us and paid a good salary, and since there were 4.25 Canadian Dollars to each Swiss Franc at the time, we earned at least twice as much as handymen who worked as bricklayers back in Switzerland.

The three old women who lived with us were constantly worried that we'd fall into bad ways or otherwise go astray. They'd tell us at least once a week: "Boys, you have to go to Church!" They were very kind ladies and they helped us whenever they could.

We worked alongside a Native American. We got on well, and I enjoyed working with him. We were given our salary each weekend, and the Native American was never anywhere to be found for the first two or three days of the next week. He'd only show up for work again when he'd drunk all of his money away. The Canadians who worked with us told us that the Native American government had built wooden houses, but when it became cold in winter, the occupants stripped the wood plank by plank to use in their ovens. They were too lazy to chop down wood themselves, and some of them ended up taking away so many planks that their houses became uninhabitable.

I was amazed that there were so many drunken Native Americans in Canada. I'd seen lots of Wild West films and read books by Karl May, but what I saw and experienced here was quite different. It saddened me, and I thought that something must have gone very, very wrong. The Native Americans had given up on themselves.

During our breaks from work, we talked about all sorts of things that were going on in the world. When we talked about John F. Kennedy after he'd been murdered, one of the Canadians said: "Yes, and it won't be long before Bobby Kennedy's been shot, as well." Bobby was shot just three weeks later on 6th June, 1968.

## Our big trip to the USA and Mexico

We'd soon saved up a few dollars and were planning a trip to the USA and down to Mexico. We bought an old car, a 1957 Plymouth, for 80 dollars. It had lots of rust holes, some of which were very large, but we filled them up with cement plaster from the building site. We also used a hacksaw to cut out the rearmost shelf in the boot. This gave us a huge space that ran from the back of the driver's seat to the very end of the boot. We then drove to a ranch and picked up a bale of straw to scatter in the space so that we'd always have a cheap place to stay. We easily stowed about 100 tins of pineapple under the straw to act as emergency reserves in case we ran out of money. I couldn't eat pineapple for years after the trip ended.

Sleeping on the car during hot weather 1968



## Sleeping in the car during bad weather 1968



We left the plastering company in late June and set off towards Minnesota in the USA. All three of our old ladies cried when we said our goodbyes. “Boys, please be careful! There are bad people everywhere!” they warned us. I’ve never forgotten these ladies. Their hearts were in the right place.

We drove through the State of Minnesota. A tornado had hit the area the previous day and left 14 people dead.

We carried on driving south through Iowa and Missouri before changing direction and heading west. We were looking for the old Wild West, and we eventually came to Dodge City in Kansas. This was where Marshall Wyatt Earp and Doc Holliday fought to make unsafe cities safe again some 150 years ago.

We continued to Colorado and found Doc Holliday’s grave in Glenwood Springs. Wyatt Earp’s grave is in Los Angeles. We then drove through Utah before starting to head south again as we entered Arizona.







It didn't take long before we arrived at Tombstone,  
one of the most famous Wild West cities.

### Boot Hill



I don't remember how long we spent in this city before we headed out for the Mexican border under a starry sky. The car had its first flat tyre just before the border crossing. We'd prepared for this and had two jacks in the car, but both were broken. They crashed back together whenever we lifted the wheel off the ground. We tried to flag down passing cars, but none of them stopped. We eventually managed to get the wheel up in the air after half an hour of trying. We didn't trust the jack's stability, so we cautiously shook the car – but it held up, and we

could carry on and cross the Mexican border just a quarter of an hour later. We became tired after two more hours of driving and decided to stop and sleep right where we were. I chose to sleep inside the car. We fell asleep quickly and didn't know how long we'd slept for when a terrible noise woke us up. Fists were pounding on our windows from all sides. We got out and saw at least ten policemen surrounding our car, all with machine guns. We were terribly confused, but we understood 'Paseporte' and showed them our passports. When they saw the Swiss Cross on the fronts of the documents, almost all of them shouted in unison: "Suizo! Suizo!" I don't remember how long they kept us for, but we definitely parted as friends. They were very surprised to find two young Swiss men so far out into the prairies in the middle of the night.

After driving south through Mexico for another three or four hundred kilometres, we changed direction and headed west once again. We'd had enough of the hot weather at around 45 degrees Celsius each day in the shade. A few days later, we suddenly saw the long-awaited Pacific.

From then on we headed north for a long time and eventually re-crossed the border to the USA.

## San Diego

The first city that we stopped in was San Diego. We thought that it seemed like a pirate town, so we didn't spend long there before heading on towards Los Angeles.

## Los Angeles

Here we visited the rich areas where the actors live and marvelled at their villas. We also saw the pavement where celebrities' names are written in stars.



## San Francisco

We carried on to San Francisco a few days later. We gazed in amazement at the Golden Gate Bridge and Alcatraz, a notorious maximum-security prison.

Alcatraz Island lies just outside San Francisco. Its prison often made it into the headlines because of the brutal methods employed there, and it was closed in 1963 by the then-Justice Minister, Robert Kennedy. United States Penitentiary Marion was opened at the same time in Illinois. This new prison was remodelled into a high-security isolation unit after a prisoner revolt, and like Alcatraz, it soon became notorious for the brutal treatment of prisoners that occurred behind its walls.

We continued north, driving through Oregon before eventually coming to Washington.

## Seattle

One night, we drove over a large hill and entered the city of Seattle. The starlit sky couldn't have been clearer, and the whole city sparkled as if it had been made from jewels. I've never forgotten this image. We rationed our money so that we'd have enough to make it back to Winnipeg.

## Vancouver

Shortly after we crossed the Canadian border, we decided to stop in Vancouver. As we were back in Canada, we started to look for work from this point on – but we soon experienced the same difficulties that we'd had back in Montreal and Toronto. There was no work available anywhere we went. We visited many beautiful cities such as Calgary, Edmonton and Regina.

## Winnipeg

We finally made it back to our hometown of Winnipeg and started to look for a room. We wouldn't stay together this time, but would still live close to one another. We also started to look

for jobs in the newspapers once again. One advertisement was looking for dancers, and since we were young and fit, we sent in an application and were invited for an interview. When they saw us, all they said was: “It’s not for you, boys. You’re too young.” Another advertisement was looking for miners, but when we showed up, the boss said: “You guys are too young. The work’s too dangerous for you.” When I think back on our situation, it occurs to me how much the Canadians looked after and mothered us to ensure that no harm came our way. Thanks, Canadians!

By now, our only option was to ask for our old jobs back at the plastering company. We were welcomed with open arms and started to earn money again.

## **Commercial Pilot School**

One day I received a letter from back home. It was from my parents, and they were writing to tell me that they’d sold the house. My time had come, and I wrote back to ask them for 10,000 Francs so that I could sign up for flying school. Commercial pilot school cost about this much from start to finish. I went to Winnipeg International Airport with my work colleagues almost every day. The airport is roughly the same size as the airport in Zurich, and three flight schools and the military all use the same runways. I’d already enquired about the cost of commercial pilot training a long time before. I don’t remember exactly how much it was, but it only cost about half as much as it would in Switzerland, so it was a real opportunity. I was given the money, and I signed up to one of the flight schools and resigned from my job straight after. I was on my way, and I was over the moon about it.

A meeting with the chief flight instructor soon revealed that my Swiss flight licenses weren’t recognised in Canada. I could only begin my commercial pilot training if I first received a Canadian

private pilot's license. This wasn't a big problem, and I passed the examination after just a few days. The Canadian pilots were amazed that I had an aerobatics license, so they regarded me as something of a flying ace.

I could now finally start training in the commercial pilot school. I was on cloud nine and couldn't believe that it had happened.

I wrote in my flight log:  
'Started Commercial Pilot School, 25th August, 1968'

Winnipeg International Airport



I began my first IFR flight – which involves flying blind – with my flight instructor the very next day. Whenever we weren't in the clouds, I had to wear a special hat that stopped me from looking forwards and to either side. I couldn't see what was happening outside the plane, so I had to rely solely on my

instruments. I immediately recognised the absolute trust that I'd have to place in the instruments; if I didn't do this, I couldn't manage IFR flights. There was also a lot of radio traffic, so you had to be careful to find an opening in which to speak. As I've already said, the airport was about as large as the airport in Zurich, and the military and three flight schools all flew on the same runways. It wasn't unusual to be alongside between 10 and 13 other aircraft during an approach. You had to be incredibly careful with what you did. I didn't have any problems, though. I was in peak physical condition and I learnt quickly. We practised IFR flights whenever my flight instructor was with me. We also did a lot of night flying. Towards the middle of the training programme I had to complete more and more solo flights, both at night and while blind. I also had to complete solo navigation flights, the longest of which covered 1,500 kilometres. I could take passengers with me whenever I wanted to, and my friend from Switzerland often came along during my solo night flights. I could have taught him how to fly, but he wasn't interested at all. Most of the time he just fell asleep next to me. I couldn't believe that someone wasn't excited about flying.

There was a lot to learn. This included theory, which was a lot more difficult than flying and always had to be done in English. At the end of the training programme, my flight instructor came up with me but only told me what to do – and of course while I was blinded and so couldn't see outside. This is more or less what would happen in the examination. I could only remove the IFR hat one or two seconds before landing.

One day, my flight instructor told me that I was ready to sit the theory and practical flying tests. The theory test would last for a whole day, and the practical test would be a two-hour IFR flight in which the examiner would subject me to all kinds of difficult situations. I bought a thick Duden English-to-German dictionary for the theory section and was confident that it would get me through.

I'd signed up to the flight school with three Canadians, and we were all to take the examination at the same time.

The commercial pilot examination was conducted by the Canadian government.

We made our way into the theory room and were allocated chairs a long distance apart from one another. The examiner saw my dictionary straight away, made a beeline for me, and took it away. It wasn't allowed. The theory examination took both the morning and the afternoon, so a really long time. I came to the conclusion that since I hadn't ever had to repeat an exam, I'd also manage to pass this one.

The practical examination took place the next day. The examiner climbed into the plane after me, sat in the right-hand seat, and leant against the side of the cockpit. All he said was: "Okay, you're the pilot. Take off." I only found out later that this particular Canadian Aviation Authority examiner had an especially fierce reputation.

Okay. He gave commands, and in English of course; I couldn't expect any help from him. I also had to take control of the radio, which wasn't that simple due to the heavy air traffic that I've already mentioned.

I requested permission to taxi from the tower, and then requested permission to take off. I wasn't nervous at all because I'd been trained well, and I was absolutely certain that I'd pass. I couldn't imagine that anything could go wrong. The plane's radio was set to loudspeaker so that the examiner could listen in. We were in the air in no time.

Moments later, the examiner said: "Climb to 4,000 feet on a heading of 140 degrees." We'd barely reached the right altitude when another command was delivered: "Maintain altitude and fly a circle of 360 degrees with a 15 degree bank, starting to the left." Not a problem. Everything was going well. But don't forget to constantly monitor the radio traffic! The next command

came soon after: “Starting at 4,000 feet and heading to the right, fly circles at a 15 degree bank while climbing to 6,000 feet. The 15 degree bank must be precisely maintained.” The examiner never said if anything was good or bad. When we reached the new altitude, he said: “I’m flying. Take your hands off the stick.” I could only see the instruments. The examiner closed the throttle and then pulled back on the stick just before we started to fall. The plane reared straight up, and he set the ailerons fully to the left and the rudder fully to the right. The plane rolled over backwards and started to spin, nose-diving faster and faster towards the ground. I didn’t see him do any of this because I was flying blind, but I recognised what was happening as soon as I saw the instruments. The boss said: “Take over control.” All of the instruments were revolving like crazy, and it was my task to stabilise the plane and return it to normal flight as quickly as possible. I managed this without any problems. Still no comments from the examiner, but another command soon followed: I should now fly a GCA (Ground-Controlled Approach) to Winnipeg Airport, and when I’d landed, I should take off again. I contacted the tower to request permission for a GCA and subsequent take-off. Everything ran like clockwork. I also had to complete various VOR approaches, and the next hour was filled with ever-more-complicated instructions. After about two hours in total, I completed a final GCA and the examination came to an end.

When the plane was parked, the examiner shifted in his seat, leaned against the side of the cockpit, looked me in the eyes and said: “You’re a very good pilot for someone so young.” He also told me that I’d received a good mark on the theory test. The other pilots hadn’t passed the test and so had failed the whole examination.

The examiner was so enthusiastic about me that he invited me to lunch, and I gratefully accepted the invitation. My flight instructor later told me that the examiner had never before

invited anyone from the flight school to lunch. No one who heard what had happened could believe it.

**I wrote in my logbook: I passed the test  
for professional pilot,  
October 24, 1968**

I was now a Canadian commercial pilot, and I was both proud and deliriously happy. God had given me what I'd prayed to him for. 'Ask and it will be given to you' is something that everyone can try without risking disappointment.

I received an offer from a helicopter firm the next day. They'd pay for me to retrain in a helicopter and I'd earn a good salary even during the training period. When I reached the required number of hours, I'd be flying heavy transport loads and would be paid very well.

I verbally accepted the offer and planned to call on the company the next Monday.

**But my life was set to turn out quite differently**

On the same evening, a postman came to my house to deliver a telegram. It was a message from home saying that my mother was on her deathbed and that I should come back at once. It was brief and succinct, but the news hit me like a ton of bricks. I booked myself onto the next flight from Montreal to Zurich. My friend didn't want to come with me because the whole decision was so rushed. He said that he'd come back around two months later. I flew from Winnipeg to Montreal in a DC9, and when I showed the pilots my commercial pilot's license, the Captain insisted that I come and sit up in the front. "Three pilots are better than two," he said, laughing. It was a wonderfully smooth flight. Since it was night-time, all the instruments were lit up and all the indicators were where they should have been; I thought

to myself that flying must be the very best job that there is. I also saw the Northern Lights for the first time during this flight. They glistened in different colours and were just beautiful to see.

I thought about home once again. When I arrived, however, I saw that things weren't half as bad as the telegram had implied. I couldn't believe that I'd been tricked back to Switzerland because my mother had missed me. She only actually died 40 years later.

I still have no idea why I didn't catch the next plane back to Canada.

I had to earn money again and was able to restart with my old employer as a machine operator on building sites. I couldn't come to terms with how I'd gone from being a commercial pilot to a construction worker. I was angry and entirely unhappy about being back in the building trade, so I had to change my situation right away. But this was a very difficult time to find a job as a pilot in Switzerland.

It didn't take long for me to find a way out. I saw an advertisement in a flight magazine for a pilot on the North Sea coast in Germany. The job was to fly scheduled and taxi service flights over the sea in single and twin-engine planes. I sent off an application straight away and included copies of all my pilot's licenses. I received a response after three or four days of eager anticipation: I was hired, but my Canadian license first had to be approved by the German Federal Aviation Office. Okay, I had to wait. Every minute seemed like an hour, but after a week, the much-longed-for letter arrived: "Mr. Bieri, Set off as quickly as possible. Your plane is filled up and ready to go." I couldn't believe that I'd landed my first job as a commercial pilot. Now I could fly all day and be paid for the pleasure! Other pilots had applied, but they'd chosen me! I found out later that I was chosen



because I could fly blind, which was an essential skill for this dangerous job.

It's now April, 1969, and I'm 24 years old. I've never talked about this before, but a whole new set of desires had been in my thoughts for quite some time, and I'd been praying to God for the wishes to come true. I longed for a loving girl who would stick with me through thick and thin, and similarly for my own family, the kind of which I'd never had when I was young. I also thought about children. I wanted all of these things intensely. For now, though, my dreams would have to wait. I had a job as a pilot and I had to pack and set off. The plane was already waiting.

### **Not long to wait before I can start my own family**

I saw my cousin before I left. He told me that he'd be performing in a local theatre production that Saturday evening in Diessbach, and that I should come along. I told him that I would. When the evening came around, I went to the hall where the play was being staged and sat down in one of the rows of chairs at the back.

I suddenly noticed a girl who was sitting a few rows in front of me. I don't think I paid much attention to the play, and I was pleased when the performance was over. Everyone stood up, the chairs were stacked away at the sides of the hall, and tables were rearranged. Musicians began to set up on the stage; a dance was about to start. I hadn't let the girl out of my sight, and I noticed that she'd also turned to look at me. My cousin told me that I should ask her for a dance. How could I? I'd never been anywhere near a dance floor and really couldn't dance at all. I went up to the girl anyway and asked her, explaining my situation before she had a chance to respond. She didn't brush me off, and instead said that she couldn't actually dance very well herself. We somehow managed to dance in time with the music, and it was incredible to look into her violet blue eyes for

the first time. They glistened at me so sweetly and beautifully; I couldn't take my own eyes off her. Her name was Marlis, and she was wearing a pretty blue dress with a red bow and black dots. Her collar was as white as snow. We danced the whole evening away, and when it was time to slowly leave the hall, I helped her with her coat. It was black with gold buttons. We were both head over heels in love, and it was love at first sight. I've never seen anything so beautiful since. This year marks our 43rd year of marriage, and I'll never allow my wife to throw away the dress and coat that she wore on our first evening together. Sometimes I look at the dress and coat and jump back in time to that first night we saw one another. I don't remember how much time we had together before I departed for Germany, but when the time came, it was very hard for us to be apart.

## **It's 1969 and I start my first job as a commercial pilot**

A few days later, I was sitting on a night train to Emden, which is up by the North Sea. I was sad and my heart felt as heavy as lead because I'd had to leave my sweetheart in Switzerland. She was the first sweetheart that I'd had and she loved me in return. It was just like when I sat on a train at eight years old and felt sad about having to leave home. Everything was somehow repeating itself.

The train pulled into Emden at just before noon the next day. A pilot from OLT was waiting on the platform to greet me. We introduced ourselves to one another and he told me that we needed to find a room for me straight away. He picked up a newspaper and we sat down on a bench to look for a room somewhere in the listings section. My colleague found an advertisement from a woman who wanted to rent a room, but only to another woman. He said that we should try it anyway, so we telephoned the woman, and when we reached her, I heard

him say: "...but he is a Swiss pilot." It turned out that she really didn't want a man in her apartment, but when she heard that I was Swiss, she said that we should come over. I was given the room straight away and it wasn't too expensive. We lived very well with one another. She gave me her bicycle so that I could ride to the airfield, which wasn't far away from the apartment, and I was even allowed to use her car. She was really very kind and helped me whenever she could. I can still hear her voice today – the way she'd call me when I came back home after flying: "Mr Bieri, You've got another letter from your bride!"

It's now 2012, but I telephoned this woman in 2003 and she immediately remembered me. We talked about when I was a young pilot and rented a room from her. I had a lot more time available when I retired at the end of 2009, so I tried to call her again. I couldn't reach anyone at her number, so I contacted the local authority and found out that she'd moved. A long while later, I received a letter from another local authority to tell me that she'd died in 2005. I started to tear up; I was too late. I'd wanted to visit her again, and I reproached myself for not having sought her out earlier. My heart was as heavy as lead once more.

But let's get back to 1969. "So, now that you have a room," said the other pilot, "we should hurry to the airfield. The boss is waiting for you." Everyone who was there gave me a warm welcome, but some of the pilots were out flying.

If I'd thought that I was now going to be given a calm tour of the airfield, I was in for a surprise. I'd never flown these types of planes before, so I was sure that I'd be given a thorough introduction to them. I was snapped out of this illusion in a second when the boss called to me: "Mr. Bieri, Start that plane! We're flying out over the sea to the island of Borkum. I have some things to do there." I got into the plane straight away and was suddenly wide-awake. I scanned the instrument panel and

noted the dials for speed, oil pressure, horizon and altitude as well as the navigational devices (ADF, VOR, ILS etc.), magnetic and gyro compasses, the turn-and-bank indicator, the variometer, the landing flap controls, the trim control, the radio and many other buttons and levers. Everything was very familiar, so I started the engine and checked both the magnets. The boss came to the plane, got in and said: "Let's go. Take off and fly on a heading of 315 degrees." I reported to the tower and requested taxi and take-off permission, and we were in the air a few moments later. About a kilometre before we reached the coast, the boss closed the throttle and told me to carry out an emergency landing. I'd learnt in detail how to fly without a engine when I flew gliders. We were about 700 metres above the ground, and as there was almost no wind, the direction in which we landed wasn't important. I started to look for a suitable landing spot – ideally a rather long grass field. When we reached 200 metres I began checking for power lines, fences and other obstacles on the ground. Everything was clear, so I was ready to land. Just before we touched down, the boss said: "Okay, that's great. Open up the throttle and get back on track."

The landing on Borkum also went well. When we stopped, the boss said: "Stay in the plane and fly straight back. I have some things to do here, so I'll come back in another plane."

Whoa, one surprise after another! He either saw that I could fly or wanted to see what he could expect from me. I requested permission to start once again, and before taking off spent a few moments checking my course so that I'd end up back in Emden. We flew out on a heading of 315 degrees, so the return trip had to be in exactly the opposite direction, i.e. 315 minus 200 plus 20, which gave a heading of 135 degrees. Everything was okay. I radioed into Emden and requested a bearing just to be sure. It matched up with my calculated heading, and I arrived back safely. This was my introduction to the world of commercial piloting!

## Hard graft

I was soon broken in, or perhaps flown in, to the work. I travelled with passengers to various North Sea islands from early in the mornings until late in the evenings, only taking brief breaks and lunch in-between. I mostly flew scheduled services, but I also took a few taxi flights. The passengers normally brought too much luggage, so you had to be extremely careful not to overload the aircraft. We only just made it over the sand dunes on many occasions. The passengers were sometimes also drunk. I once had three men in the plane who were totally drunk as we flew over the sea. The one next to me grabbed the control stick for the third time, and the plane jolted and made a half roll to the left. All of my earlier persuasion attempts had failed, so now I had to shake things up before the situation become dangerous. I closed the throttle almost completely and turned the roll into a vertical nosedive. I called out loudly to the three drunks: “We’re going down! It’s over!” We were only 400 metres up, so the sea started to approach fast. All I had to do was monitor the speed to stop the plane from going too quickly. This is why I closed the throttle before beginning. I could have straightened the plane out at the start, but I wanted to really lay down the law since these passengers had the potential to be extremely dangerous. The sea came closer and closer while I slowly opened the throttle – but I only pulled us out of the dive and fully reopened the throttle when we were just a few metres away from the waves. I cried to the back: “You stupid idiots! We nearly crashed!” One vomited in a bag and the other two didn’t make another sound. When we landed, they all got out of the plane as pale as corpses. I never heard from them again.

## Postal flights at five in the morning

I counted the early morning postal flights as some of my most enjoyable. We stowed the post sacks in the back of the plane and took off as dawn broke. A mechanic sometimes came with us to

drop the sacks as we flew over the islands; we'd fly over where the post had to be dropped at a low speed and altitude. The air was normally calm at this time in

the morning. There was sometimes a little light ground fog, but everything was generally peaceful while everyone was still asleep. I often yodelled over the radio, spreading my voice over the surrounding area and earning myself the nickname 'The Swiss Gorge Yodeller'.

### **Nearly a head-on collision**

My boss had flown Messerschmitts in the Second World War, and two of the other pilots had also been in the German Luftwaffe during the conflict. I once saw these two each take a whisky bottle from their jacket pockets and take a good sip before a flight. They saw me and offered me a sip as well, but I politely declined. I wasn't really alarmed, as anyone who had survived the war as a pilot could also survive a flight with a little whisky.

What did alarm me was that we flew to and from the islands without set heights for our outward and inward trips. To avoid collisions, we should have flown out to the islands at e.g. 800 metres and returned to the mainland at e.g. 700 metres. I was sure that our current practice wouldn't work well over time, and all the more so because we often flew in fog with zero visibility. The only thing that each pilot had to report to the control tower was when he flew over the coastline on his way in and out.

One day, I was returning to Emden from the island of Juist before lunch. There was heavy fog over the North Sea that made looking out from the cockpit seem like looking into a laundry room. I was flying at an altitude of 500 metres. I knew from the clock on the instrument panel that I was about to reach the mainland, so I prepared to report my coastline crossing over the radio. One of my colleagues, another Swiss pilot, was faster, and I heard him say "Coast" across the airwaves. I remembered from our conversation that morning that he'd be flying to Juist, so we

could well have been on a collision course. Three seconds at most had passed since his report when I cried into the microphone in Swiss German: “What altitude are you at?” He answered immediately: “I’m at 500.” We were both at exactly the same height. I screamed even more loudly into the microphone: “Go down! I’ll go up!” I pulled on the control stick until I was travelling almost vertically, pulling a curve upwards at nearly 2G. I’d barely made the manoeuvre when I saw the other plane appear like a black shadow from the fog. He just passed under my plane on the left-hand side. I couldn’t see him for more than half a second before he disappeared once more; it was strange and scary, and we both could have died.

Regulations didn’t actually allow us to fly blind, but what could we have done? We mostly ran scheduled flights with fixed departure times, and it came down to money, the company, and survival! From then on we flew out to the islands on altitudes with even numbers and back on altitudes with odd numbers. The more I flew over the North Sea, the more I recognised what a dangerous job I had. Strong winds were another frequent problem.

### **On a collision course with four Starfighters**

The Luftwaffe had a low-altitude flight path between two islands. I was running sightseeing flights around Borkum, but on this particular day, the weather was poor and extremely hazy. You could barely differentiate between the horizon, the sea and the sky. I had three passengers on board, and I suddenly heard a loud voice over the radio: “Bieri! Careful!” I had no time to ask questions before I heard a deafening noise. It was over in a split second, but what had happened? Well, four Starfighter jets had flown right past us at exactly the same altitude. We could recognise the fighters because of their speed. My passengers cheered with delight and had no idea of the danger that we’d been in. The jets’ low-level flight path ran between the islands, so they’d probably missed their approach path by a half second

and ended up flying over the island. This was at the time when the Luftwaffe was losing a lot of Starfighters and pilots to crashes.

## **A thunderstorm and engine failure above the North Sea**

I still don't know why I signed up for this flight. It was pure suicide: A 'flight of no return'.

It was an extremely hot afternoon and the air was heavy. You could hear the incessant rolling of thunder a long way off towards the sea, but in Emden, the weather was still reasonably good. Air traffic had practically ceased, and I was sitting with a few other pilots in the Flight Office. Suddenly the office door sprang open and the boss came in to tell us that a passenger urgently needed to get to the island of Borkum. "Who wants to fly in this weather?" he asked. We all looked at one another, but no one responded. I stood up and said: "Okay, I'll do it." We often flew VIPs, government officials, actors, pop stars etc., and my passenger was from the government. I took him straight to the plane. He'd only brought a briefcase, so there was no large luggage to deal with.

We were in the air just three minutes later, and I soon saw that the weather was getting worse. "Oh, the weather up here looks much worse than it does from the ground!" my passenger said. He also apologised for my having to fly in these conditions, but said that his meeting on the island was very important. "It's not that bad. We'll manage," I replied. When I reached the coastline, all I could see was a deathly black storm front. The clouds were spiralling upwards, and I knew that we wouldn't have a normal flight if I flew into them. This should have been the moment to stop the flight and head back, but I decided otherwise. I radioed in that we were flying over the coastline and then began to head towards the dark storm. Just a minute later, I was in hell. Visibility dropped to zero and heavy rain began to shake the plane around like a feather. I was convinced that the plane would



break apart at any moment. Thunder and lightning alternated from second to second, and the incredible noise surrounding us made me think that we might have flown into hail.

Thunderstorms can cause air to cool very quickly, and this can lead to carburettor icing and engine failure. I checked the carburettor and pulled the lever that provides it with warm air; if the carburettor iced up, the engine's number of revolutions per minute would increase to a dangerous level. Exactly at that moment, the engine stopped, and its number of revolutions per minute fell to zero. I sent out a mayday over the radio: "Call sign DEGNU, Engine failure over the North Sea between Emden and Borkum." I reached under my passenger's seat and pulled out a life jacket with my right hand. "Put it on!" I cried. I saw that his face had become as grey and pale as a corpse, but I couldn't worry about that right now. Everything had to be done very quickly; I didn't even have time to put on my own life jacket. It would have been necessary, as I couldn't swim.

At the age of 24, professional pilot in Germany in 1969



Swiss-Bernese Alps and Jura flight  
<https://youtu.be/nYHouuIC-5g>

## How it looked before I flew out over the North Sea



Copyright© R. Titze

What had happened? Why had the engine failed? I immediately identified the cause: When I'd opened the flap to let warm air pass over the carburettor, rainwater had collected and flooded into the engine. The plane's speed meant that the propeller was still turning, though. While it wasn't providing any power, it might still pump the water out of the engine. My only goal now was to get the engine going again, so I pressed the starter repeatedly. Radio messages came in, but I just ignored them; I didn't have any time to lose. I kept on looking through the windshield to see if the propeller had started to turn faster. I couldn't hear it because of the raging storm outside. I was also watching the engine's RPM counter, but it remained close to zero. Suddenly I saw something white at about 30 degrees below

us. I didn't need long to recognise what it was; we were only about 500 metres above the North Sea when the whole incident began, and we'd been falling fast. A second later, I saw white foaming waves approaching us with great speed. I knew that we'd be in the cold waters in just a few moments. It was right at this point that the engine started up again. I carefully opened the throttle and was gradually able to gain altitude over the waves. I then stayed at about 20 metres above the water so that I wouldn't miss the island. I could now finally take a breather and report my improved situation over the radio. I looked at my passenger to ensure that he'd started to take breaths again, and I told him that we'd soon be landing. I flew back to Emden an hour later when the storm had relented. Afterwards, I considered that we'd definitely have drowned if I'd taken any time with the radio or tried to put on my life jacket. We were only just above the waves when the engine spluttered back into life.

I'm still amazed that I never panicked or felt scared in any of the many dangerous flight situations that I found myself in.

It wasn't just this flight that was dangerous; all of the company's pilots flew on the edge. The weather was often so bad that we flew blind. We weren't allowed to do this, as we were supposed to always maintain at least minimal visibility both ahead and below. But if we'd stuck to the flight visibility rules, the company would have soon faced difficulties due to the large number of cancelled flights. I often said to my fellow pilots that one of us would have a crash sooner or later.

I missed my sweetheart back in Switzerland more and more with every day that passed. I received a letter from her almost daily, and I always wrote back. We both felt that we couldn't live without one another. We belonged together!

The sweetheart I'd left behind in Switzerland



Aerobatic pilot at 20 years of age  
<https://youtu.be/jqXqrDMiLZ4>

I'd been flying in Germany for a few months, but I began to seriously consider jacking in flying altogether and heading back

to Switzerland. When I talked to my landlady about my intentions, she told me emphatically and repeatedly that I should really think hard; I was born to fly, and I lived for flight. She said that I should bring my bride to Germany – but I told her that if I wanted to start a family, my salary from my current job wouldn't be sufficient.

I've often thought back to what she said, and as I write these words, I'm very sad that I gave up flying. It is, after all, the very best job that it's possible to have. There's not a plane that passes through the sky above me that I don't look up at.

Ultimately the inevitable happened: I quit my job as a pilot so that I could start a family

## **My last flight as a commercial pilot**

On my last day, I was allowed to fly between all of the islands to say goodbye to my friends. I can't say that it was difficult, because my sweetheart was waiting eagerly for me back in Switzerland.

One thing happened during that day that I've never forgotten. I went to the control tower on every island, and in one, I said: "The flying here's very dangerous. Something's bound to happen one day."

After I'd been home for about two months, I received a letter from my landlady back in Germany. I still have the letter. She'd included a newspaper clipping about a plane crash. My boss had crashed a twin-engine plane into a forest during a snowstorm and had died. They had to search for several days before they found the wreckage among the snow-covered trees.

## **Back in the train**

I was on a night train once again, but this time I was happy to be there. I was going home to my sweetheart. We were going to start a family together and build up a nest for ourselves and our children. I was going to have the family that I'd never had

before. The train was travelling fast, but its steady noises gradually sent me off to sleep.

## Our wedding celebration

We could barely wait for our wedding day, but we had a lot to organise, and time sped by. It was a beautiful time, and we began to look for a flat in Lyss – our own nest. The apartment wasn't anything special and was on the fifth floor with no lift, but those things didn't matter. We were unbelievably happy to have found our home. I think that our rent was 445 Francs per month.

On 14th November, 1969, we went to the registry office in Pieterlen, and we were married the next day in the church in Langnau in the Emmental. We were now man and wife, and we were overjoyed about it. On 16th November, 1969, we flew to Gran Canaria for our honeymoon.

Our church wedding on 15th November, 1968



Our song

<https://youtu.be/8oEu9HcWins>

I had been home for about six months when I received this letter came from Germany.



297 Emden, den 29. Mai 1970  
Schwabenstr. 53

Lieber Herr Bieri !

Ich weiss nicht, ob meine Nachricht Sie erreicht. Sicherlich sind Sie inzwischen verheiratet und Ihre Anschrift hat sich geändert. Versuchen will ich es aber, da ich annehme, dass die anliegende, leider sehr traurige Nachricht Sie doch interessiert. Es sind zwar schon einige Wochen darüber hingegangen, aber ich denke noch oft an den tragischen Tod von Jan Janssen. Er wurde unter grosser Anteilnahme der Bevölkerung beerdigt. Die Piloten hielten am Sarg die Ehrenwache und trugen ihn von der Kirche zum Friedhof. Frau Janssen will vorerst den Flugbetrieb weitermachen. Für sie ist es meines Erachtens eine fast nicht zu bewältigende Aufgabe. Es ist schade um einen Betrieb, den Herr Janssen in jahrelanger Arbeit aufgebaut hat.

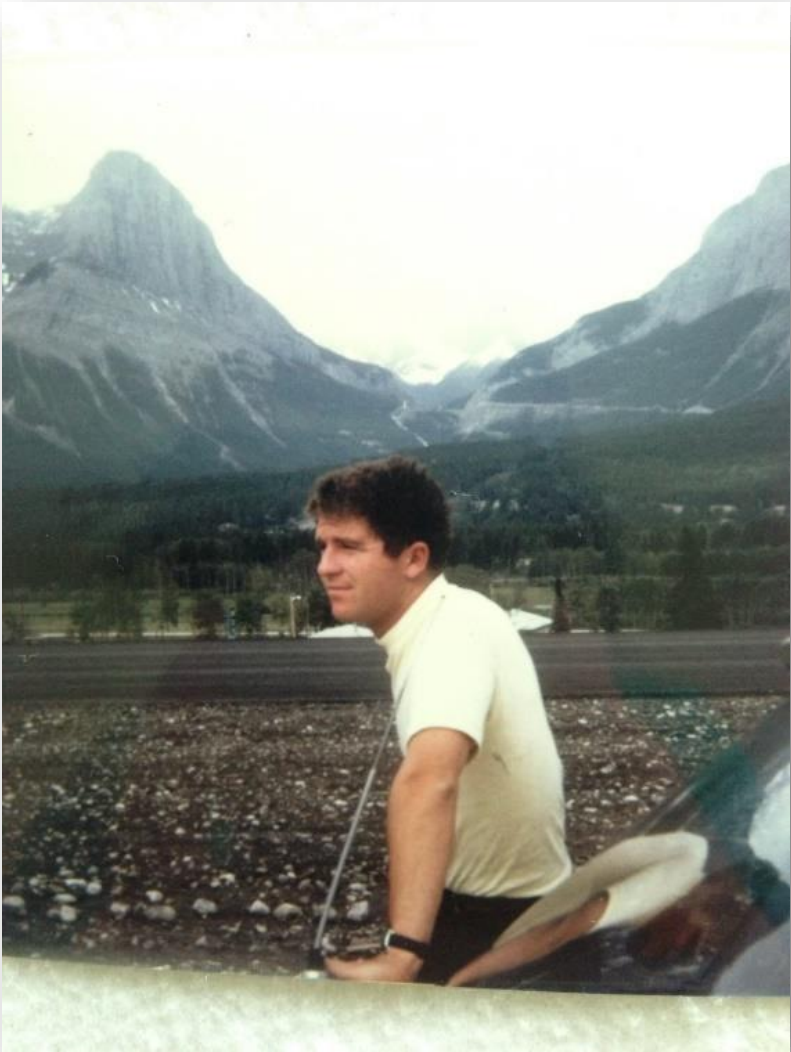
Ich hoffe, es geht Ihnen gut. Vielen Dank für Ihren Weihnachtsgruss.

Haben Sie nicht doch manchmal Sehnsucht nach einem Flug über das Meer zu den Inseln oder nach einem Gewitterflug ?

*Heglicher  
Hr. Lisa Jansen.*



Hans Bieri 1968 in Canada  
<https://youtu.be/yZYkSIworWs>





## Going back to building work

When I came back from Germany, I was able to go straight back to work with my former employer as a site manager. I had to earn money, and I wanted my wife and me to live well. When we married, we didn't have a penny to our names. We bought the furnishings for our flat on a hire purchase agreement, so we spent the next four years paying off a few thousand Francs in debt. This didn't bother us, though; we were happy and together.

## Our first child

We had a daughter one year after our wedding. We named her Jacqueline, and we cried with joy the first time we heard her cry. I wrote this letter to Jacqueline for her 25th birthday:

Our daughter, Jacqueline



Diessbach, 19th November, 1995

**My dear Jacqueline,**

Congratulations from the bottom of my heart on reaching your 25th birthday. I wish you all the best for your future.

The words that you're reading here are sure to have a very positive effect on your life at some point or another.

Before I continue, I want to make something clear: I'm not super-religious, part of a cult, or anything out of the ordinary. I only go to church when I have to – maybe to one of Nicole's concerts or to a wedding or a funeral.

But I would like to profess one thing here, before the whole world:

I believe in God and Jesus Christ with all my heart,  
with all my power,  
and with all my thoughts, and I will do for as long as I live!  
God has shaped my life ever since my first year in school.  
I never doubted in him, and I prayed to him every day.  
In his kindness, he never left me,  
and he never refused any of my requests.

I prayed since I was in school that I'd one day have a loving family. It happened, and that's why I gave up my career as a pilot.

I'd only been married to Mam for a short while when I prayed to God to send us a girl. You, Jacqueline, are the proof of that gift.

I was there when you were born. I'll never forget that day; Mam and I cried with joy the first time we heard you cry. We were over the moon. When I retrace your life in my mind, I always

remember you in Lyss when I used to come back home for lunch. Your frizz-covered head and little hand were all that poked out over the balcony railings as you waved to me, and I looked forward to those moments every time.

I remember when you once helped me on Mother's Day. We cooked a good meal for Mam, and you decorated the table with flowers and a card that I wrote. Your cheeks were red, and your whole face was beaming with joy.

Another time, Mam was out taking driving theory classes. We wanted to wait until she came home, but we fell asleep together before she arrived. You know the photo that I mean.

The years went by like lightning, and I was soon driving you to a language school in Nice. I'll never forget when we said goodbye that time. You were going in one direction, and I was going in the other. I stopped and looked you, gave a last wave, and then checked to see if anyone had seen the tears that were streaming down my face.

I also like to think back to our family holidays. You know, like when we did the washing up on our first holiday in Dénia. That was a laugh.

Jacqueline, with you, I have paradise on earth. I'm happy. In 1981, we nearly lost both of our houses. Some of friends and relatives revelled in our misfortune, and Mam and I were almost at rock bottom.

When I was really down, I drove to the church in Langnau where Mam and I had our wedding.

It was the middle of the day and the church was open, but I was alone there. I cried bitterly. I wasn't crying because I was down,

but because I was absolutely certain that God would help me – just as he'd done many times before in my life.

As I stood in the empty space, Jesus Christ and God were close to me. I prayed that everything would turn out well, and I placed all of my trust in the Lord. I didn't have the slightest doubt that things would work out. I left the church with a deep and peaceful certainty. No one had seen me.

When I met one of my old classmates, he wanted to comfort me and so said that everything would somehow right itself. I told him: "Don't worry. It'll all be good in the end." I didn't tell him that with God and Jesus on my side, I couldn't ever lose.

Almost two years passed before I landed the job in Bern. I was the best applicant from almost 100 who'd applied. I finally had a secure job that was also very well paid.

Why am I writing all of this? Jacqueline, I love you so much – as much as only a father can love his daughter.

Jacqueline, if you trust in God as firmly I do, you can't ever lose, and you'll have everything that you want. Don't ever forget him; pray every night before falling asleep and thank him for everything. You'll soon see and experience what I mean.

Many people think that they can manage without God. Believe me: They'll go down like stones in water.

Jacqueline, here are a few words from the Bible, the Book of Books.

Power flows from the following words like water from a crystal-clear spring!

## Faithfulness to God during trials

If you come to serve the Lord,  
Prepare your soul for trials.

Set your heart aright, and constantly endure,  
And make not haste in time of calamity.

Cleave to him, and depart not,  
That you may be increased at your latter end.

Accept whatever is brought upon you,  
And be longsuffering when you passest into humiliation.

For gold is tried in the fire,  
And acceptable men in the furnace of humiliation.

Put your trust in him, and he will help you.  
Order your ways aright, and set your hope on him.

The spirit of those that fear the Lord shall live,  
For their hope is upon him that saves them.

Whoso fears the Lord shall not be afraid and shall not play the  
coward,  
For he is his hope.

Jesus Christ said:  
'I am the resurrection and the life. He who believes in me will  
still live, even if he dies.'

Jacqueline, never forget him!

O Grace of God Wonderful Amazing

<https://youtu.be/DBg66wxUsaQ>

## Footprints in the Sand

One night I dreamed a dream.  
As I was walking along the beach with my Lord,  
Across the dark sky flashed scenes from my life.  
For each scene, I noticed two sets of footprints in the sand,  
One belonging to me and one to my Lord.  
After the last scene of my life flashed before me,  
I looked back at the footprints in the sand.  
I noticed that at many times along the path of my life,  
Especially at the very lowest and saddest times,  
There was only one set of footprints.  
This really troubled me, so I asked the Lord about it.  
“Lord, you said once I decided to follow you,  
You’d walk with me all the way.  
But I noticed that during the saddest and most troublesome  
times of my life,  
There was only one set of footprints.  
I don’t understand why, when I needed you the most, you  
would leave me.”  
He whispered, “My precious child, I love you and will never  
leave you.  
Never, ever, during your trials and testings.  
When you saw only one set of footprints,  
It was then that I carried you.”

This poem was written on 10th October, 1964,  
by Margaret Fishback Powers from Canada

Jacqueline, you’re going to ask how I can know whether  
everything that I write here is true. I can say with certainty that  
you’ll feel that it’s all true at some point in the future. In this  
moment, you’ll come to know the Holy Spirit. Just sit tight and  
wait for it all to come to you.  
From now on, you’ll have to look after yourself and be  
responsible for what you do. But there’s one good tip that I can  
give you so that you know that God’s really there.

I've experienced everything just as I've written it here. I've tried it all and experienced it all. When I deviated from the path, my life went badly. When I found my way back onto the upward-sloping path, my life went well.

That's why my tip to you is: Try it for yourself, and you'll experience exactly the same as me.

If you forget my words and don't pray to God or believe in him, your life will go from bad to worse.

If you believe in God, everything will always go well.

Try it for yourself. You'll see that I'm right.

There are only two paths in life: One that leads up, and one that leads down.

Jacqueline, my darling, I wish you all the best once again for your future.

Your Pap

## **Our own construction firm**

I'd been working as a building site manager for two years when my youngest brother, Ueli, came and asked me if I wanted to start up our own construction firm. He was also a building site manager back then. It was 1971.

I was very enthusiastic about the plan, and straight away told him: "Why not?" Our two other brothers also worked in construction, so they joined in as well. We quit our jobs with three months' notice and set about starting up our firm. There was a lot to prepare and organise, and we also had to submit a lot of different applications to the authorities.

We soon sorted everything out and started to get down to the real work. We were the fastest builders of detached houses for far and wide. We never took more than three or four weeks from

excavating foundations to covering the houses with bricks. We always had enough to do, as we worked with a general contractor who gave us a constant stream of houses to build.

In between projects, we built houses for each brother in turn. I still live in mine with my wife, but the other three brothers all sold theirs over time.

## Our son, Tobias

Our son, Tobias, came into the world on 7th August, 1973.

Mam and I were so happy. Everything happened exactly as we wanted: First a girl and then a boy.

Tobias, the mobile crane driver



Heavy Transport with Tobias Bieri

<https://youtu.be/DPmI46a6l5c>



## Tobias



I'd also given up flying in my own time. If I couldn't fly professionally, then I didn't want to fly at all. I was often able to go up in helicopters when I was in the military with the Air Force. The other soldiers were always afraid of these rides due to the high number of fatal crashes. I wasn't afraid, because I was immune to death. I never even thought about it; I knew that God had set aside a certain day for me, and that it lay in his hands whether that day would come around sooner or later.

The years passed and there was a lot of hard work, but we enjoyed being our own bosses. Our eldest brother, Ruedi, left early on to become a crane operator for another company. In 1975, my youngest brother, Ueli, said that he wanted to run 'Brothers Bieri' by himself. I agreed, Ueli bought me out, and I founded my own business as a general contractor. I now designed houses and worked on them until they were ready to be lived in, taking responsibility for every stage of the process.

## Another fork in my life's path

Life on the building site was tough because we worked at a different pace from people on other sites. But the worst thing was the weather; we were constantly exposed to the heat and the rain. I thought hard about whether I wanted to work in construction until I retired, and the answer was a clear 'no'. I often thought about how good my life could be if I was flying, but my family was worth much more. They were my everything. In 1978, I said: 'At the end of this year, I'll quit construction for good.' I'd had more than enough.

I still didn't know what I wanted to do afterwards, but when the end of the year came around, I wound up my construction firm. I had a family with two children as well as two houses. If money wasn't coming in, it might not be long before I lost the houses. I went to a special college to become a private detective, and I learnt karate and how to fire a variety of different weapons. I also obtained permits to carry weapons from the police departments in each Swiss canton. I finished with a diploma, but there was no federal-level recognition for private detectives in Switzerland back then. I could set up a detective agency, though. I had plenty of work, but there were sometimes gaps between jobs, so my income level was never secure. I soon realised that this wasn't the right path, and I started to look for a new career that offered a more reliable situation.

My next attempt was as a sales representative for an insurance company that specialised in legal cover. I didn't earn too badly – so long as practically all my relations were insured up to their eyeballs. I suddenly heard from several different customers that they'd been hoodwinked; they'd made a claim but the insurance company didn't want to pay out. It was becoming more and more trouble, so I quickly said goodbye to the insurance industry. They're all just crooks, I thought.

My next job was also in sales. This time I was selling a car magazine, but I soon realised that this wasn't going to keep my family afloat.

## Wood briquetting

One day, I read something about wood briquettes. These blocks of wood are pressed together using only very high pressure. There's no binding material or glue involved. I found out more about this natural product, and I quickly discovered that it has a very high heating value – similar, in fact, to that of lignite.

This was in 1979, the year of the second energy crisis, so my mind was racing at full speed. With their high heating value, these briquettes could be used to power wood heaters. The raw material was wood shavings from carpentry workshops. No one in the

whole of Switzerland knew what to do with this wood waste, so the raw material was definitely secure.

I designed a production facility that was 30 metres long by 20 metres wide and 10 metres tall. It was built straight away, and in it were installed a briquette press, two silos for woodchips, and another silo for the completed briquettes. There was an outlet under this third silo where the briquettes were loaded into sacks. My father-in-law was always on-hand to help, just as he had been before with my construction business; it was a family operation. While the building work continued, I set about getting my license to drive a lorry. I obtained the license after three months of training, and we bought a lorry that had a special suction device for transporting wood shavings. The briquettes were loaded into 25-kilogram sacks, and each briquette was nine centimetres wide and between five and twenty centimetres long. As there was an energy crisis, the bank only conducted a short check before agreeing to give me a 250,000 Franc loan with no collateral requirement. I'd already set up a company back when

I founded my construction firm, and since it still existed, I just had to rename it. I decided to call the new business ‘Hans Bieri Wood Briquetting Ltd.’

Business went well in the first year, and I had to pay four per cent interest on my bank loan. The interest rate suddenly jumped, however. I don’t remember why this was, but I ended up paying eight per cent. In short, this meant that I needed to increase the price of each briquette. This wasn’t good, and I noticed immediately that sales were down and our running costs were no longer covered. It didn’t take long for a gentleman from the bank to pay us a visit. He was dressed in a suit and tie, and he told us that we’d need to offer both of our houses as collateral for the loan. I initially refused, as I was currently being given the money without providing collateral. The smart banker replied by saying, and I quote: “Mr. Bieri, our bank will never let you fail. You can trust me on that. If you don’t agree, then you don’t believe in the business.”

I finally agreed and provided our two houses as collateral to the value of a quarter of a million Francs.

Not long passed before the bank demanded that I file for bankruptcy. My business was ruined, but it had been going downhill ever since the interest rate had risen. Nevertheless, I still owed a quarter of a million Francs on our two properties. When I noticed that the business was going downhill, I started to pay all of my suppliers in cash. I didn’t want anyone to lose a penny because of me.

The business was wound up, and my wife and I were devastated. Some of our relatives took devilish delight in our failure.

I briefly mentioned this defeat in the letter that I wrote to my daughter, Jacqueline, on her 25th birthday.

## **Our second daughter, Nicole**

The business collapsed just when Nicole entered the world on 7th May, 1981. This little creature was like a warm ray of

sunshine during such a difficult time. When Nicole was 17, her grandmother died unexpectedly. Her grandmother's house was only 20 metres away from ours, so Nicole had visited her every day since she was small. When she found out about the death, she cried for days, and nothing that I did could console her. I eventually wrote her this letter:

**Pastor Olaf Latzel Hold on!**

**You are not alone...**

[https://youtu.be/3mN\\_we88XDI](https://youtu.be/3mN_we88XDI)

Nicole in 2013 with her daughter, Leonie



*Diessbach, 15th October, 1998*

## ***Our dear Nicole,***

*I wanted to write this to you for your 25th birthday, but I see that you need it now.*

*Nicole, you probably won't understand much of what I write when you read it for the first time. Read it over and over again nevertheless. You'll come to see what it means – and above all, you'll come to experience it!*

*You've lost someone who you loved very much for the first time in your life. I've thought about this day for a long while, and I knew that it'd be an extremely difficult time for you and Mam.*

*Nicole, you needn't worry about your grandmother, because you know that you can trust in God completely. She said to me on a few occasions: "When he up there wants me, he'll come and get me." She said this without fear, and actually almost with joy. Nicole, I can tell you, that your grandmother was on the right path, because I'm quite sure that our God and Saviour really exist.*

*You'll see that time heals all wounds. Your grandmother also wouldn't want you to be sad; we'll see her again, and then it'll be forever.*

*Here are your grandmother's words to Mam, Erika, Heidi and Hans. I'm sure you've already read them on the card. She knew for certain that God is real.*

*Quote from your grandmother:*

*"Obey the Lord Jesus so that you'll all be saved and won't go astray. Then we'll see one another in the afterlife, where there's*

*only peace, and illness no longer exists. Thanks and praise be to God.*

*Be good to your children and always take your time. These actions will bring you happiness and God's blessings. And never forget to pray, as praying is just as important as your daily bread.*

*With all my love,  
Your Mother!' "*

*And Jesus Christ said:*

*'I am the resurrection and the life.  
He who believes in me will still live,  
even if he dies.'*

*Nicole, Mam and I prayed with you every night when you were small. I'm sure that you still know how to do it, so carry on praying. Put simply, praying is just asking God and our Saviour for something that you'd like, and giving thanks for everything that he gives to you. Mam and I have given you almost everything that you wanted, so what do you think God will give you? He loves you above all, and he sees everything. His eyes are as bright as a thousand suns, and he sees all that happens on Earth in its entirety.*

*Nicole, pray to God and ask him for whatever you want. Never forget him – not for a month, a week or a day – and he'll give you whatever you ask for. With him by your side, you'll never need to be afraid. You can only win, and no one can do you any harm.*

*He'll also give you a wonderful boyfriend if you sincerely ask him for that. Have patience: You'll feel it when you meet the right one.*

*You'll ask yourself why I'm so certain. Believe me: I've experienced it all myself. I've prayed to God since I was small,*

*and God has given me everything that I have today. And I have everything: I have Mam, a house, three children, a secure job and lots more.*

*Nicole, never forget one thing: There are two paths in life, one that leads downwards, and the other that leads upwards to God. Choose the right path, and you'll never regret it. On the wrong path, you'll go to waste.*

*When things are going well, there's always the danger of turning your back on God. You'll know when he gives you a rap on the knuckles to warn you. He wants to say: "Nicole, pray to me. Without me, you won't reach your goals. Don't forget me for a single day."*

*You might be asking how to pray. It's simple. Ideally before you go to sleep, talk with God or our Saviour about everything that you want. You don't even need to move your lips. Talk with him about your grandmother, and thank him that you're healthy, that you have enough to eat, and for everything else that comes to mind. Then just ask him for something that you'd like. Try it, and you'll soon see how well you both get along.*

*When I talk about God, I also mean Jesus Christ. When I talk about Jesus, I also mean God. As Jesus said: 'No one comes to the father, except through me.'*

*Nicole, if you want to be certain that everything written here is true, keep an eye out in the future and think about what happens to you.*

*Nicole, believe me:*

*If you forget God, everything will soon turn sour. If you believe in God and pray to him, everything will go well – and you'll soon see that these words are true.*

*I know this because I've experienced it all myself.*



*Nicole, we love you from the bottom of our hearts.  
Mam and Pa*



### **The world didn't stop turning**

I had to earn money again, and now all the more than before the bankruptcy. There was only one thing to do: I had to go back into construction. I earned enough there to cover all of our expenses. I went into a small construction firm as a bricklaying foreman and built houses once more.

I thought a lot about my flying days again during this time. I often worked in the rain, and doing this hit me like a hammer. I was 37 years old, and it seemed like I'd be in this job until I retired at 65. Just the thought of this caused me to choke. But I didn't give up, and I looked through the job listings every day to find a position that I might enjoy.

### **It was at exactly this point that I experienced something strange**

Some people say things like 'You can't change the habits of a lifetime' and 'I'll only believe it when I see it'.

I'm about to tell you what I experienced for around four years at the start of the '80s.

One morning, I was lying in bed and dreaming. Actually, I wasn't dreaming: I was awake and lying in bed with my eyes closed. My mind was fully alert, but I'd decided not to move or open my eyes. If I did either, everything would be ruined. As I say, this wasn't a dream; I was wide-awake and nothing was

hazy. All I was doing was watching a film play in my head – and the film was so clear that it could have been showing reality.

What did I see? Next to our house was a side street with a slight slope. A small funeral procession was travelling along this street, going up and past our house. But what I was particularly astonished by was that the coffin was on a hearse that was pulled by a horse. I last saw a funeral like this some 30 years before, and they definitely didn't still do them in this way. The people behind the hearse were crystal clear, and I could see every detail – as if what I was seeing was real. I knew right then that I was awake.

The unthinkable happened a week later. I looked out of the window and thought that I was going crazy: The funeral procession from my vision was going down the side street and past our house. It wasn't just any funeral procession, either. It was exactly the procession that I'd seen while I lay in bed with my eyes closed. I naturally asked around to find out why they'd used a horse. The deceased had requested that his last journey be made by horse, just as had been done in the past.

Time passed, and I continued to have visions that sooner or later always came true. I started to tell people that I knew, and when they noticed that everything happened as I predicted, they started to become scared. They told me not to tell them if I dreamt anything about them. It was strange that my visions were only ever about bad things, and never about things that went well.

I only had the visions in the mornings while lying in bed. Once I saw a burning plane fall from the sky, and just a few days later, I saw exactly the same scene in colour in the newspaper.

Another time I saw two skydivers fall to their deaths. Their parachutes didn't open, and I saw the exact moment when they hit the ground. When I went to work in the morning, I explained what had happened to one of my colleagues who knew about my dreams. I told him that we should call an airfield so that they could pass on the message to all of the skydiving groups. He just

laughed at me and said: “No one would believe you. They’d just laugh.” I let it be, but the very next day I saw on the news that a skydiver had crashed. I said to my colleague: “I saw two. It’s the first time that the visions haven’t been right.” On the next day, a second man crashed in exactly the same place.

I’ll tell you now about one of my last visions. This one really shook me up. At the time, I was on military service in the Air Force. I was with a helicopter squadron, and I was working as a helicopter technician (controlling refuelling etc.). We were stationed on an airfield in the Bernese Oberland. We were given our orders a day in advance, and when I read mine one day, I saw that I’d been assigned to a convoy that had to fly concrete gravel up to farmers on a high mountain pasture. My job was going to be hanging the concrete bucket underneath the helicopter.

Another convoy flew out to central Switzerland that same day, and the next day they were going to be on manoeuvres. The evening came, and we all went to our beds. In the morning, before I’d fully woken up, a spine-chilling film played in my head in great detail. One of our helicopters had crashed in central Switzerland, and six soldiers had died. I don’t remember whether or not I reported the dream, because I would have just been laughed at. After breakfast, we went out to the airfield and prepared our helicopters to fly concrete gravel up the mountainside. We had to wait around because heavy fog was delaying take-off. I sat on the floor and leant against a tree; I was still very agitated and was literally shaking. As I sat there, our sergeant cycled as fast as he could over the runway towards us. When he reached us, he let the bicycle fall to the ground. He didn’t need to tell me anything, because I knew exactly what had happened. His face was bright red, and as he gasped for air, he said: “One of our helicopters has crashed.” There had been six deaths.

Something makes this accident all the more tragic, as well. The night before it happened, the squadron leader had taken all of the pilots up in his helicopter to show them the valley where the manoeuvres would take place. He pointed out a wire cable that was stretched across the valley and told the other pilots to watch out for it the next morning. Every one of them saw the cable. On the morning when they flew the manoeuvres, the sun was still rising and the pilots were blinded. The squadron leader who had pointed out the cable the previous night flew directly into it. The cable hit just above the nose wheel, so if he'd been flying only 30 centimetres higher, nothing would have gone wrong.

I don't remember if it happened after this dream or a short while after – but in any case, the visions ended up disappearing as fast as they'd first set in.

This part of my life showed me that there's more to the world than humans can understand. But I don't need any such proof to believe in God and Jesus Christ.

## **My last job before retirement**

I worked in construction for another two years. I really didn't enjoy this extremely hard work, but I had a large and loving family that counted on me. For the time being, there was no other way. When everything went sour two years previously, I'd gone into the church in Langnau and come out absolutely sure that God would help me. This made it easy to endure everything that came my way.

Despite the good pay, we were running short on money. I told my wife that we should cancel our subscription to the regional newspaper, as it swallowed up almost 400 Francs each year. She always listened to what I said, but she absolutely wanted to keep this newspaper. I gave in and we kept it.

One day, I saw a listing in this newspaper that wanted two people to work in the security sector in Bern. I sent an application off straight away along with all of the necessary documents. I made

the shortlist from nearly a hundred applicants. I think they even checked up on my great-grandmother, as people were always saying that they'd been asked about me. The selection process was extremely strict, because no mere mortal could ever get into where I ended up.

The whole process lasted for half a year, but I finally received news that I could start as a security official on 1st August, 1983. My boss later told me that I was their first choice from nearly a hundred applicants.

I don't want to name the company or write about my work here, as I signed a document guaranteeing my lifelong silence. I became my boss' deputy after two years, and I stayed in this role until I retired some 27 years later. My salary rose annually, and we'd finally turned a corner. I loved this job, but I still thought about flying every now and again.

As part of this security job, we had to do a seven-day night shift every five weeks.

I had a lot of free time during these nights, so I thanked God for what he'd already given to me and for what he was still giving to me now. I wrote the following:

## **My confession of faith to God and Jesus Christ**

**I shout this to all people of the world, even if doing so should cost me my life.**

I love the one God, my Lord and Jesus Christ,  
with all my heart, with all my power,  
will all my actions and with all my thoughts,  
in this very minute, in this hour, today and  
for all eternity. – Amen

I try to love my enemies more each day,  
and I'm always managing this better.  
Because Jesus said: 'Love your enemies,  
and love your neighbour as yourself.'  
This is the second most important commandment.  
The first commandment is at the top of this page!

These words do not come from me. You, Lord, gave them to me.  
I looked for you while I was still small, and  
you gave me wisdom. You showed me very early on what  
love is – and love is right up there with the first commandment.  
You don't make life easy for me, but you give me everything that I  
need,  
and always at just the right moment.  
I feel strongly that you're very close to me.  
It saddens me how people worship idols:  
The stock market, the lottery, bank accounts etc. And we still wonder  
why things go wrong for us!

It's just as you said 2,000 years ago:  
'You have eyes to see, but you see nothing,  
and you have ears to hear, but you hear nothing.'

My dear God, my dear Father, my dear Jesus Christ: Give me  
strength,  
and make me your tool so that I can convince many non-believers of  
how great your love for us is.  
There is only you, and I love you immensely.  
Nothing is more important to me than you, my Lord and Jesus Christ.

You were, you are and you shall be for all eternity.  
Everything shall pass, but your love shall remain.  
I thank you from the bottom of my heart, and I believe in you  
with all my strength and all my actions and all my thoughts.

Hans Bieri, written at 04:00 on 4th October, 1997



## *Hot Yellow Sand!*

You say: “I don’t believe in God or Jesus Christ.”

What will you say after you’ve read these words?  
Which path will you decide to take?

Only one path leads to fresh, cool water – and  
to God and Jesus Christ!

**H**ot yellow sand; nothing around except desert. The sun’s unbearable, there are no clouds in the sky, there’s no source of water, and there’s no escape...

**I**n the middle of this desert, you stumble across an almost invisible path that winds through the hot yellow sand. You’re about to die of thirst, your lips are chapped, your skin is dry, and you feel dizzy. You fall to the ground and your face touches the scorching hot sand. Consciousness returns, but you think that you’ve reached the end.

You lift your head, and your blinking eyes scan the distant horizon. You suddenly see that the path has a fork – one path goes left, and the other goes right.

Your senses come flooding back and you look away from the sun. In that moment, a shadow falls over you and a man stands by your side. You only see his outline, but he approaches you, helps you to your feet, and says: “My son, take the right path. It’ll quickly lead you to an oasis full of fresh, cool water.”

A moment later, the man disappears.

Which path do you take?

There’s no question: You’ll obviously take the one that leads to water.

Think about your life and choose wisely!

I wrote these words at midnight on 16th December, 1999.

Hans Bieri

Jesus said: ‘Most certainly I tell you,  
he who hears my word, and believes him who sent me,  
has eternal life, and doesn’t come into judgment,  
but has passed out of death into life.’

John, 5:24

## Our son Tobias’ wedding

Our son, Tobias, married in 2000, and we were blessed with a very sweet daughter-in-law. I wrote a few words for them for their wedding day.



# Hochzeitstag, 25. Februar 2000



## Warm congratulations for your wedding!

Christine and Sabine asked me to leave a keepsake for your wedding day, just like all the other wedding guests.

As you didn't opt for a church ceremony, I'd like to give you both a few words for your path in life. You may not fully understand them until much later. I wrote 'Hot Yellow Sand' for everyone who reads it. 'Footprints in the Sand' is my favourite poem.

Brigitte, we had a brief chat about faith when I found out that you weren't having a church ceremony. You told me that you do believe, but that your belief doesn't have anything to do with churches. I was extremely relieved when I heard this, because I'd been very shocked to hear that you weren't being married in a church. I also don't go to church, or at least only when I have to. When I want to be near to God, I prefer to be totally alone.

Tobias, when you were small, Mam and I prayed with you every night before you went to sleep. I'm sure that you haven't forgotten. I can only guess at what you think today. You'll see that nothing works without God and Jesus Christ.

When I talk about God, I also mean Jesus Christ. When I talk about Jesus, I also mean God. As Jesus said: 'No one comes to the father, except through me.'

Dear Brigitte, dear Tobias, there are only two paths in life. One leads down, and the other leads up towards God. You can choose your own path, but choose wisely!

If you want to be certain that everything written here is true, keep an eye out in the future and think about what happens to you.

I'll tell you both this:

If you forget God, everything will soon turn sour. If you believe in God and pray to him, everything will go well, and you'll be given everything that you desire. You'll also soon see that these words are true. I know this because I've experienced it all myself. You'll no longer have anything to fear.

Brigitte and Tobias, don't doubt or ponder too long on what I've written. You'll experience it all for yourselves, and who'll feel it when the time comes. Just rejoice with all your hearts about the little one that'll soon come into your life – and be thankful for the gift well before he or she arrives.

Dear Tobias, you were always a very good son, and you've only brought joy into our lives. Mam and I are very proud of you, and we dearly love both you and Brigitte.

I wish you all very best. Hold closely to one another for always.  
Your Pa

The Lord said:  
“My thoughts are not your thoughts,  
and your ways are not my ways.  
As the heavens are higher than the earth,  
so are my ways higher than your ways,  
and my thoughts higher than your thoughts.”  
Isaiah 55:8-9



Turn to Jesus Christ. He holds all power on both heaven and  
earth!

## **Our first grandchild Melanie**

We waited eagerly for our first grandchild, and on 3rd April, 2000, our Melanie came into the world. That was really something. We were so very happy, and our family became larger.

Captain Melanie on a yacht in France



## **Our second grandchild Simon**

Simon arrived on 16th June, 2002, and our happiness grew ever further. Brigitte and Tobias now had a family of four, and everything was becoming more wonderful.

Simon's first flight as a co-pilot in 2011



Simon Bieri the tractor driver



1968 in Canada at the age of 24



De la misma Iglesia Sivan & Anna Neufelds

<https://youtu.be/OIzN8hnOM4M>

### **Our daughter Nicole's wedding**

In my letter to Nicole, I told her that she'd know for certain when she met the right man. One day, she came to me and said: "This is the right one. His name's Ueli." The wedding took place in a big church on 26th July, 2008. It was a beautiful and sunny day.

Nicole and Ueli at their wedding



### **Our third grandchild Lenny**

Nicole brought a son into the world on 26th February, 2010. She named him Lenny. As I write these words on 10th December, 2012, Nicole and Ueli are expecting their second baby over Christmas. I'm hoping for a girl.



Agriculture, Lenny the youngest conductor from Switzerland  
August 28, 2012

<https://youtu.be/cENht0s-5Kc>



Baptism of Lenny on August 1, 2010

<https://youtu.be/po1T5HgDenc>

Lenny with his mom



## Our fourth grandchild Leonie

It's now 4th January, 2013. Our daughter Nicole had her second child at 01:15 on 31st December, 2012. She was named Leonie, and my wishes were granted once more.



Leonie, as pretty and sweet as a flower  
with her Grandma and Granddad



Leonie  
Baptism of Leonie on May 26, 2013  
[https://youtu.be/xzQLbMB\\_tG0](https://youtu.be/xzQLbMB_tG0)



Lenny with Leonie



## "Our Five"



### **Trusting in God and Jesus Christ**

What is trust? Can you trust in God with only 50 per cent confidence? How would that work? I say that you can't. If you want to trust in God, it only works if you invest 100 per cent. Let's see what Jesus said about this.

### **Jesus walks on water**

Matthew 14:22-33

22 Immediately Jesus made the disciples get into the boat, and go ahead of him to the other side, while he sent the multitudes away. 23 After he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into the mountain by himself to pray. When evening had come, he was there alone.

24 But the boat was now in the middle of the sea, distressed by the waves, for the wind was contrary.

25 In the fourth watch of the night, Jesus came to them, walking on the sea. 26 When the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, “It’s a ghost!” and they cried out for fear.

27 But immediately Jesus spoke to them, saying, “Cheer up! It is I! Don’t be afraid.”

28 Peter answered him and said, “Lord, if it is you, command me to come to you on the waters.”

29 He said, “Come!” Peter stepped down from the boat, and walked on the waters to come to Jesus. 30 But when he saw that the wind was strong, he was afraid, and beginning to sink, he cried out, saying, “Lord, save me!”

31 Immediately Jesus stretched out his hand, took hold of him, and said to him, “You of little faith, why did you doubt?” 32 When they got up into the boat, the wind ceased.

33 Those who were in the boat came and worshiped him, saying, “You are truly the Son of God!”

## **A lack of trust**

*Matthew 17:14-21*

14 When they came to the multitude, a man came to him, kneeling down to him, and saying, 15 “Lord, have mercy on my son, for he is epileptic, and suffers grievously. He often falls into the fire, and often into the water. 16 So I brought him to your disciples, and they could not cure him.”

17 Jesus answered, “Faithless and perverse generation! How long will I be with you? How long will I bear with you? Bring him here to me.” 18 Jesus rebuked him, the demon went out of him, and the boy was cured from that hour.

19 Then the disciples came to Jesus privately and said, “Why weren’t we able to cast it out?” 20 He said to them, “Because of your unbelief. For most certainly I tell you, if you have faith as a grain of mustard seed, you will tell this mountain, ‘Move from

here to there,’ and it will move, and nothing will be impossible for you.

### **Pray to God with complete confidence**

7 “Ask, and it will be given you. Seek, and you will find. Knock, and it will be opened for you. 8 For everyone who asks, receives. He who seeks, finds. To him who knocks, it will be opened.”

I can tell you now: If you don’t have complete confidence in God, you won’t be given anything, you won’t find anything, and no one will open the door for you. There’s no third path that lets you only have half-hearted confidence in God, saying things like: ‘I don’t believe in God, but I do recognise some higher power.’

Leonie with Juliana

**Baptism Juliana on August 2, 2015**

<https://youtu.be/zJYyaugAAcM>



## **I have absolute faith in God!**

I visited one of my old schoolmates one day in 2008. We were the best of friends, and we both knew that we could rely on one another, whatever happened.

We'd never spoken about God and Jesus, but it was always clear to me – or at least so I thought – that he trusted in God as much as I did. Well, as we chatted, I asked him about this. He told me that he couldn't understand such things, and that he absolutely didn't believe in God. His wife held the same views. I was so shocked that I forgot everything around me. My best friend was standing on the edge of the abyss! It couldn't be true! Dear God, help me to save my friend!

Without thinking, I told him that his life had run more or less on a constant level. There had been small fluctuations up and down, but nothing pivotal or especially noteworthy had happened to him. "Is this right?" I asked him. He agreed. Then I said: "In the near future, something will happen that completely throws you off track. When it happens, it'll prove to you that God and Jesus exist. Don't forget what I've said."

I just wanted to save my friend. There was nothing to consider; I just knew that God would give him this sign. I had absolute faith in God.

After about half a year, my friend was completely knocked sideways from one day to the next when, entirely unexpectedly, his wife died.

Four years have now passed. I still haven't talked to him about what happened, but I hope to do so through this book.

My life story ends here for the time being. I recently turned 68, and as I'm writing this book, I'm considering what the future will bring. Learn from what I've written and you'll succeed!

**There is nothing here in this world.. O home O home...**

[https://youtu.be/42uwass\\_bM8](https://youtu.be/42uwass_bM8)



Israel, Negev Desert, November 2016



I took the photo for this book's front cover during this balloon ride: 'Sunrise'



### **I'll give you something important to think about**

I'm sure it's been pointed out to you – whether by me, by your grandparents, or in religious classes or other meetings – that you should believe in God. But your gut will have told you that it isn't necessary.

You're enjoying your career and are absolutely satisfied with the world. You like your home, you have lots of good friends, and you want to get to know the big wide world. The constant reminders seem unnecessary, and you're sick of hearing them. I can understand you well. But something lingers in the back of your mind, because you can't be absolutely certain that I'm wrong. It must be important to you who's correct: Is it you or



me? You have to give at least some thought to God and Jesus Christ, right?

If it was about something small, it wouldn't be so bad if you later found out that you were wrong. You'd know for the future.

But getting to know God and Jesus Christ concerns where you'll spend eternity. Surely that's important to you and you should clarify the situation?

How do you define eternity? Can you quantify it as a length of time? If not, how can you specify it? I agree that we'll never comprehend it until we're there. But surely you should try to consider it at least once, to get a rough idea?

If you do give it some reflection, you'll undoubtedly ask how long eternity lasts. As I say, I see it like this: In a faraway land, there's a mountain made of granite that's almost 9,000 metres high. Every 100,000 years, a little bird comes by and rubs its beak on the mountain, once to the left and once to the right. When the little bird's rubbing finally makes the mountain disappear, one second of eternity has passed.

This answer should give you some idea of eternity's infinity. But there are no seconds in eternity; eternity can't be measured, because it doesn't have an end.

Nonetheless, you can see the relationship between our lives, which might last 50, 70 or maybe 90 years, and the eternity that follows. Isn't it important to know where and how we'll spend this time? Aren't these questions actually all the more important?

You go to school, ensure you get a good job, work for 40 years if things go well, and then enjoy your retirement for a few years. Isn't it irresponsible not to ask about God and Jesus Christ? Then you could know where you'll spend eternity. You don't know how long you'll live before your time is up, but one thing's for certain: Death and eternity are waiting for you.

'People are destined to die'. This biblical saying has never been doubted by even the greatest mockers and the most stubborn of

atheists. They can't challenge it, because people would laugh if they did so. After all, who's never experienced death in his near vicinity?

But how does Hebrews 9 continue? 'And then comes judgment!' Isn't it irresponsible and foolish not to worry and just to let everything happen? I'm sure that you'll see for yourself where you'll spend eternity. But once you're there...you're there forever.

'Where a tree falls, there will it lie' (Ecclesiastes 11:3).

You'll probably say that you're not in any hurry! You've still got so much to do, and you'd rather not fill in your free time with thoughts about life and death.

You think that you can still do it all – just when you've already enjoyed some of your life and are a little older.

Will you live for another 60 years? Or for 40? Just 20? Maybe you'll only live for another ten months, or even just two hours? We've all experienced the following situation, or at least heard of it: 'He was happy and looking well, when all of a sudden he said he wasn't feeling too good. He lay down for a little while, and then he was dead.'

And if you live on for a long time, do you just want to leave everything to God? If you do this while you remain alive, will God still accept you? He's forgiven many people as they lay on their deathbeds in the last moment. He even forgave one of the criminals who was crucified next to Jesus.

God is always looking for you and talking with you, but if you don't have ears to hear him, then he'll put a seal on his guidance. He will dampen your senses so much that you'll never find the way to him again.

You'll ask yourself: When does God speak to me? I ask you: Isn't he speaking to you now with these very words that I've written? Take care not to stumble. The path and the gate that lead to God and Jesus Christ are strait and narrow.

You can read the following words in the Bible:

After the rapture of the congregation, God will send ‘a powerful delusion’ to all those who have heard the gospel but not believed in it, ‘so that all will be condemned who have not believed the truth’ (2 Thessalonians 2:11-12). God can do the same with you if you continually reject his call. ‘The times of ignorance therefore God overlooked. But now he commands that all people everywhere should repent, because he has appointed a day in which he will judge the world in righteousness by the man whom he has ordained. He has given assurance of this to all men, in that he has raised him from the dead’ (Acts 17:30-31).

Shouldn’t you take this seriously and come to God at once, confessing your sins and petitioning that he might accept you?

‘We are therefore ambassadors on behalf of Christ, as though God was making his appeal through us. We beg you on behalf of Christ, be reconciled to God. For he made him who knew no sin to sin on our behalf, so that in him we might become the righteousness of God’ (2 Corinthians 5:20-21).

‘Therefore God set a day once more, calling it ‘Today’. After a long time, he said through David: “Today, if you hear his voice, do not be stubborn”’ (Hebrews 4:7).

I know that I can’t tell you that God exists and to believe in him. It won’t happen that easily. But I can tell you this: seek for God and you’ll find him, and never doubt in him.

Remember what I experienced with my teacher when I was seven years old, back during my first year at school:

My mother was in the hospital for a long time, so my teacher often came to our house in the evenings to look after things. She made sure that I had a wash and went to sleep, and she also sat on the edge of my bed and prayed with me. She told me stories about God and Jesus, and I always listened intently. One day my

mother came back and my teacher stopped coming. I missed my teacher in the evenings; it seemed like something was missing. I prayed every night by myself and thought of the stories that she'd told me about God and Jesus. After a long while, I suddenly realised that I received everything that I prayed for. I've never forgotten what my teacher told me during that time, and it's shaped my life significantly to this very day. I've never doubted God or Jesus Christ since. And you all know my life story.

With me, my brothers:  
Rudolf, Walter and Ueli in 2023



Abschied von meinem Bruder Walter  
<https://youtu.be/cj340vD9JK8>

## **Everything that you need to know is in the Bible, in the New Testament!**

To my fellow man I say:  
Many of you don't know God, and you also don't want to get to know him. But he knows you, and you'll all meet him in the end.  
Don't wait until it's too late!

God says to you: You can choose between life and death, and you'll get what you choose.

You can laugh at me, but .....

‘Do not be deceived. God is not mocked, for whatever a man sows, so shall he also reap.’  
Galatians 6:7

I'll now give you some information on the Bible's uniqueness, courtesy of Prof. Dr. Willem J. Ouweneel (The Netherlands).

Israel, the reflection of the Bible



Israel and Jordan trip 2015 and 2016  
<https://youtu.be/8e5D4pmA28s>

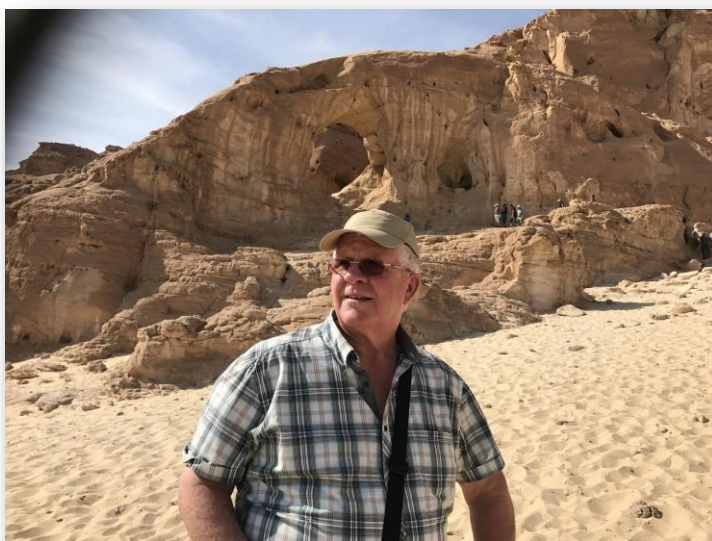
Israel, Negev desert, November 2016



2016 In Israel on the Golan with a tank unit



In Israel in the Negev Desert 2016



# **The Bible**

## **Its unique origins**

Let's look at some of the Bible's unique characteristics. Then you can draw your own conclusions.

To start with: No one can deny that the Bible has exceptional origins. It's unique in its unity, relevance, circulation, heritage, and literary and moral character. The Bible was written over a period of around 1,500 years. It was put to paper by more than 40 writers, the vast majority of whom never knew one another. The writers came from many different professions (king, shepherd, fisherman, doctor, military leader) and worked in many different places (deserts, dungeons, mountains, palaces, islands). They wrote in many different states of mind – some with great joy, and others in grief and despair. They prepared their books on three different continents: Asia, Africa and Europe. They also wrote in three different languages: The Old Testament was mostly written in Hebrew, with small sections in the (related) Aramaic language, and the New Testament was written in Greek. All of this writing, split across so many sources and periods, came together into one book.

Moses wrote five books. A few more were added when David reigned. Each letter, word and sentence of the Old Testament was more or less in place by the time of Ezra the Scribe, shortly after the Babylonian Captivity. The exact book that we have today was completed some four hundred years before Christ was born. As the historian Flavius Josephus tells us, the Old Testament was so respected that no one would have dared to change it in any way over the course of the centuries.

The origins of the New Testament are almost even more wonderful. As far as we know, Christ never wrote as much as a single sentence of divine revelation – and as Jews, his disciples never dared to add anything to the Old Testament. It's likely that



not even a letter of the New Testament existed until some 50 years after Christ's birth. But then the miracle happened. Without any form of plan, the books of the New Testament start to emerge, written by different people who often live great distances from one another. Here's a text about Jesus' life, there's a letter, and over here's a wonderful essay (e.g. the Letter to the Hebrews). Somewhere else is a New Testament text with prophetic significance. The texts are circulated before ultimately being collected by Christian communities who have little difficulty in determining which books belong to the collection and which do not. Their reverence for these texts is so great that almost all Christians immediately recognise the New Testament, and almost no one has the audacity to alter it in any way. And note: The four authors of the gospels didn't come together and arrive at the conclusion, after much deliberation and earnest prayer, that Matthew would write about Christ as a king, Mark would show him as a servant, Luke would present him as a real person and John would portray him as the son of God. No, nothing like that took place. In the same way, the other writers didn't come together to determine that, for example, Peter and John would write more about Christian doctrine (and each from a different point of view), or that James and Peter would write more about the practical Christian life. It didn't happen like that. Instead, each author was profoundly moved to try and shed light on a certain topic. When all of these texts were placed together, they formed a wonderful whole.

This point is what makes the origins of the Bible so unique. How could so many authors from so many different generations, backgrounds and surroundings create, without arrangement, a work that is so perfect in its unity? Let's look at it from a different perspective: Let's imagine that ten of the world's most famous writers each complete a piece on a single controversial topic. All of the writers have the same way of life, belong to the

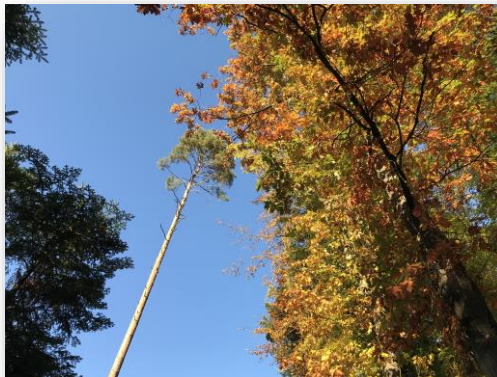
same culture and generation, share the same opinions, live in the same place, are in the same state of mind, and speak the same language. Would their writings all agree with one another? It's impossible. But how did it happen with the Bible?

All over the world, thousands of books are written and forgotten within a generation. Why is the Bible so different? The Bible isn't just any 'old book'. We can safely say that some of its parts belong to the oldest preserved texts in existence. And it's still devoured by millions of people. Not just out of historical interest (the average person isn't too bothered by this), but mainly because people sense the Bible's importance to life today. The Bible was put together over thousands of years – mostly by members of a single, inconspicuous Middle Eastern people and predominantly in a language that, until recently, was dead. How can such a book still capture the attention of millions?

The Bible's uniqueness becomes even clearer when you consider its continued relevance, the enormous interest in it, and its incredible number of different translations and editions. The Bible was one of the first books to ever be translated. Around 250 BC, the entire Old Testament was translated into Greek. This translation is called the Septuagint. Since then, the Bible has been translated, revised and commented upon more than any other book worldwide. There are currently more than 4,000 professionals working full-time and part-time on Bible translations. By 1978, the Bible appeared in 268 languages and dialects, while the New Testament was available in a further 453 languages, and parts of the Bible in another 939 languages. Altogether, this made 1,660 different languages. By 1990, these figures had risen to 318, 726 and 902 respectively, making a total of 1,946 different languages. Once again, the Bible is unparalleled. The same applies to sales figures. The Bible is read by more people, published in more languages, and sold in greater

numbers than any another book in existence. While a certain bestseller might move more copies in the short term (e.g. a month), no book approaches the Bible in terms of long-term sales.

A book that's been published and read millions of times isn't at great risk of disappearing. But this wasn't always the case. The Bible was originally written on materials that were easily ruined. This meant that it had to be copied by hand for centuries until printing was developed. In comparison with other works from classical antiquity, more Bible manuscripts survive today than manuscripts for ten other comparable, randomly selected works combined. For any classical work, to have several dozen manuscripts would be astonishing, and these would still usually be at least a thousand years younger than the original manuscript. But for the New Testament, we know of at least 4,000 complete Greek manuscripts, 13,000 Greek manuscripts of sections, and around 9,000 manuscripts of classical translations (mostly in Latin). We have fewer Old Testament manuscripts, but these were generally kept even more carefully.



The Bible isn't just unique because of its transmission through (pre-printing press) times. It's also unique because of its survival through much considerable persecution. People have tried to burn and destroy the Bible for centuries. Kings, emperors and even religious leaders have worked against it with fanatical zeal. The great Roman emperor Diocletian issued a decree in 303 AD commanding the destruction of all Christians and all copies of their holy book. It was the biggest attack on the Bible in history: Hundreds of thousands of Christians were killed, and almost all Bible manuscripts were destroyed. Nevertheless, the Bible soon reappeared, with the Emperor Constantine ironically raising it to a position of infallible authority some 22 years later at the First Council of Nicaea. Constantine also gave Eusebius the task of having 50 Bibles drawn up at the government's expense. Such twists and turns happened time and time again. The famous French rationalist, Voltaire, claimed that the Bible would be seen as nothing more than an antiquity within a hundred years of his lifetime. He died in 1778, and fewer than 50 years later, the Geneva Bible Society was using his house and printing press to produce huge numbers of Bibles! And if you try to buy one of Voltaire's works today, you'll face difficulties.

The Roman Empire was followed by the Middle Ages. The Roman Church kept people so far away from the Bible that centuries passed and it remained almost unknown. Even Luther said that he was an adult before he set eyes on a copy. Council decrees and papal excommunications were used to publicly incinerate Bible translations and judge, torture and burn Bible readers before the Inquisition. The situation only began to change, slowly, after the Reformation. But then a series of new, special attacks arose straight from within Protestantism's bosom: 'Bible criticism'. A whole army of rationalists emerged, primarily in Germany, and they were armed with the wildest and most violent attacks. Nevertheless, the Bible has since become

more spread, more read and more loved than ever before. The attackers are dead, their criticisms have long been discredited, and the Bible remains like a rock. What book is comparable? The Bible is the best-loved book in the world. It's just amazing that it's the most-hated and most-criticised book in the world, as well.

## **And now the first words from the Bible, from the Old Testament.**

The following words were written over 2,000 years ago, and yet they remain completely relevant today.

Jesus Sirach lived in the second century before Christ.

THE BOOK OF JESUS SIRACH is not everywhere in the Bible, but I find it absolutely valuable for young and old as a guide for our lives.

### **Sirach**

#### **Prologue to the Greek translation**

1 Many and great things have been delivered to us by the law, the prophets, and by the others that have followed in their steps. For this, we must give Israel the praise of instruction and wisdom. Now, those who read the scriptures must not only themselves understand them, but must also as lovers of learning be able through the spoken and written word to help the outsiders.

2 My grandfather, Jesus, having much given himself to the reading of the law, and the prophets, and the other books of our fathers, and having gained great familiarity therein, was drawn on also himself to write somewhat pertaining to instruction and

wisdom – in order that those who love learning, and are addicted to these things, might make progress much more by living according to the law.

3 You are entreated therefore to read with favour and attention, and to pardon us, if in any parts of what we have laboured to interpret, we may seem to fail in some of the phrases. For things originally spoken in Hebrew have not the same force in them when they are translated into another tongue. And not only these, but the law itself, and the prophecies, and the rest of the books, have no small difference, when they are spoken in their original language.

4 For having come into Egypt in the thirty-eighth year of Energetes the king, and having continued there some time, I found a copy affording no small instruction. It seemed highly necessary that I should myself devote some diligence and labour to the translation of this book. During that time I have applied my skill day and night to complete and publish the book for those living abroad who wished to gain learning and are disposed to live according to the law.

## **The glorification of wisdom**

1:1 All wisdom comes from the Lord, and is with him forever. 2 The sand of the seas, and the drops of rain, and the days of eternity, who shall number? 3 The height of the heaven, and the breadth of the earth and the deep, and wisdom, who shall search them out? 4 Wisdom has been created before all things, and the understanding of prudence from everlasting. 6 To whom has the root of wisdom been revealed? And who has known her shrewd counsels? 8 There is one wise, greatly to be feared, the Lord sitting upon his throne: 9 He created her, and saw and numbered her, and poured her out upon all his works. 10 She is with all flesh according to his gift, and he gave her freely to them that love him.

11 The fear of the Lord is glory, and exultation, and gladness, and a crown of rejoicing. 12 The fear of the Lord shall delight the heart and shall give gladness, and joy, and length of days. 13 Whoso fears the Lord, it shall go well with him at the last, and in the day of his death he shall be blessed. 14 To fear the Lord is the beginning of wisdom, and it was created together with the faithful in the womb. 15 With men she laid an eternal foundation, and with their seed shall she be had in trust. 16 To fear the Lord is the fullness of wisdom, and she satiateth men with her fruits. 17 She shall fill all her house with desirable things and her garners with her produce. 18 The fear of the Lord is the crown of wisdom, making peace and perfect health to flourish. 19 He both saw and numbered her; he rained down skill and knowledge of understanding, and exalted the honour of them that hold her fast. 20 To fear the Lord is the root of wisdom, and her branches are length of days.

### **Self-control and sincerity**

22 Unjust wrath can never be justified, for the sway of his wrath is his downfall.

23 A man that is longsuffering will bear for a season, and afterward gladness shall spring up to him. 24 He will hide his words for a season, and the lips of many shall tell forth his understanding.

25 A parable of knowledge is in the treasures of wisdom, but godliness is an abomination to a sinner. 26 If you desire wisdom, keep the commandments, and the Lord shall give her to you freely. 27 For the fear of the Lord is wisdom and instruction, and in faith and meekness is his good pleasure.

28 Disobey not the fear of the Lord, and come not to him with a double heart. 29 Be not a hypocrite in the mouths of men, and take good heed to your lips. 30 Exalt not yourself, lest you fall and bring dishonour upon your soul. And so the Lord shall reveal your secrets, and shall cast you down in the midst of the

congregation, because you came not to the fear of the Lord, and your heart was full of deceit.

### **Faithfulness to God during trials**

2: 1 My son, if you come to serve the Lord, prepare your soul for trials. 2 Set your heart aright, and constantly endure, and make not haste in time of calamity. 3 Cleave to him, and depart not, that you may be increased at your latter end. 4 Accept whatever is brought upon you, and be longsuffering when you passest into humiliation. 5 For gold is tried in the fire, and acceptable men in the furnace of humiliation. 6 Put your trust in him, and he will help you: Order your ways aright, and set your hope on him!

7 You that fear the Lord, wait for his mercy, and turn not aside, lest you fall. 8 You that fear the Lord, put your trust in him, and your reward shall not fail. 9 You that fear the Lord, hope for good things, and for eternal gladness and mercy. 10 Look at the generations of old and see: Who did ever put his trust in the Lord and was ashamed? Or who did abide in his fear and was forsaken? Or who did call upon him, and he despised him? 11 For the Lord is full of compassion and mercy, and he forgives sins and saves in time of affliction.

12 Woe to fearful hearts, and to faint hands, and to the sinner that goes two ways! 13 Woe to the faint heart! For it believes not, and therefore shall it not be defended. 14 Woe to you that have lost your patience! And what will you do when the Lord shall visit you?

15 They that fear the Lord will not disobey his words, and they that love him will keep his ways. 16 They that fear the Lord will seek his good pleasure, and they that love him shall be filled with the law. 17 They that fear the Lord will prepare their hearts, and will humble their souls in his sight, 18 saying, "We will fall into the hands of the Lord, and not into the hands of men: For as his majesty is, so also is his mercy."



## Obligations to parents

3:1 Hear me your father, O my children, and do thereafter, that you may be saved. 2 For the Lord has given the father glory as touching the children, and has confirmed the judgement of the mother as touching the sons.

3 He that honours his father shall make atonement for sins: 4 And he that gives glory to his mother is as one that lays up treasure. 5 Whoso honours his father shall have joy of his children, and in the day of his prayer he shall be heard. 6 He that gives glory to his father shall have length of days, and he that hearkens to the Lord shall bring rest to his mother, 7 and will do service under his parents, as to masters.

8 In deed and word honour your father, that a blessing may come upon you from him.

9 For the blessing of the father establishes the houses of children, but the curse of the mother roots out the foundations.

10 Glorify not yourself in the dishonour of your father, for your father's dishonour is no glory to you. 11 For the glory of a man is from the honour of his father, and a mother in dishonour is a reproach to her children.

12 My son, help your father in his old age, and grieve him not as long as he lives. 13 And if he fails in understanding, have patience with him, and dishonour him not while you are in your full strength.

14 For the relieving of your father shall not be forgotten: And instead of sins it shall be added to build you up. 15 In the day of your affliction it shall remember you, as fair weather upon ice, so shall your sins also melt away.

16 He that forsakes his father is as a blasphemer, and he that provoketh his mother is cursed of the Lord.

4:1 My son, deprive not the poor of his living, and make not the needy eyes to wait long. 2 Make not a hungry soul sorrowful, and neither provoke a man in his distress. 3 To a heart that is

provoked add not more trouble, and defer not to give to him that is in need. 4 Reject not a suppliant in his affliction, and turn not away your face from a poor man. 5 Turn not away your eye from one that asks of you, and give none occasion to a man to curse you: 6 For if he curses you in the bitterness of his soul, he that made him will hear his supplication.

7 Get yourself the love of the congregation, and to a great man bow your head. 8 Incline your ear to a poor man, and answer him with peaceful words in meekness.

9 Deliver him that is wronged from the hand of him that wrongeth him, and be not faint-hearted in giving judgement.

10 Be as a father to the fatherless, and instead of a husband to their mother: So shall you be as a son of the Most High, and he shall love you more than your mother does.

## **Wisdom as a teacher**

11 Wisdom exalts her sons, and takes hold of them that seek her.

12 He that loves her loves life, and they that seek to her early shall be filled with gladness. 13 He that holds her fast shall inherit glory, and where he enters, the Lord will bless. 14 They that do her service shall minister to the Holy One, and them that love her the Lord does love. 15 He that gives ear to her shall judge the nations, and he that gives heed to her shall dwell securely. 16 If he trusts her, he shall inherit her, and his generations shall have her in possession.

17 For at the first she will walk with him in crooked ways, and will bring fear and dread upon him, and torment him with her discipline, until she may trust his soul, and try him by her judgements. 18 Then will she return again the straight way to him, and will gladden him, and reveal to him her secrets. 19 If he goes astray, she will forsake him, and give him over to his fall.

## **The courage for truth**

20 Observe the opportunity and beware of evil, and be not ashamed concerning your soul. 21 For there is a shame that brings sin, and there is a shame that is glory and grace.

22 Accept not the person of any against your soul, and reverence no man to your falling. 23 Refrain not speech when it tendeth to safety, and hide not your wisdom for the sake of fair-seeming.

24 For by speech wisdom shall be known, and instruction by the word of the tongue.

25 Speak not against the truth, and be abashed for your ignorance. 26 Be not ashamed to make confession of your sins, and force not the current of the river.

27 Lay not yourself down for a fool to tread upon, and accept not the person of one that is mighty. 28 Strive for the truth to death, and the Lord God shall fight for you.

29 Be not hasty in your tongue, and in your deeds slack and remiss. 30 Be not as a lion in your house, nor fanciful among your servants.

31 Let not your hand be stretched out to receive, and closed when you should repay.

## **On a false sense of security**

5:1 Set not your heart upon your goods, and say not: "They are sufficient for me." 2 Follow not your own mind and your strength to walk in the desires of your heart.

3 And say not: "Who shall have dominion over me?" For the Lord will surely take vengeance on you.

4 Say not: "I sinned, and what happened to me?" For the Lord is longsuffering. 5 Concerning atonement, be not without fear to add sin upon sins.

6 And say not: "His compassion is great; he will be pacified for the multitude of my sins." For mercy and wrath are with him, and his indignation will rest upon sinners.

7 Make no tarrying to turn to the Lord, and put not off from day to day. For suddenly shall the wrath of the Lord come forth, and you shall perish in the time of vengeance.

8 Set not your heart upon unrighteous gains: For you shall profit nothing in the day of calamity.

### **On responsible speech**

9 Winnow not with every wind, and walk not in every path: Thus does the sinner that has a double tongue. 10 Be steadfast in your understanding, and let your word be one.

11 Be swift to hear, and with patience make your answer. 12 If you have understanding, answer your neighbour, and if not, let your hand be upon your mouth.

13 Glory and dishonour is in talk, and the tongue of a man is his fall. 14 Be not called a whisperer, and lie not in wait with your tongue: For upon the thief there is shame, and an evil condemnation upon him that has a double tongue. 15 In a great matter and in a small, be not ignorant.

### **How wisdom is acquired**

6:18 My son, gather instruction from your youth up, and even to hoar hairs you shall find wisdom.

19 Come to her as one that ploughs and sows, and wait for her good fruits, for your toil shall be little in the tillage of her, and you shall eat of her fruits right soon.

20 How exceeding harsh is she to the unlearned! And he that is without understanding will not abide in her. 21 As a mighty stone of trial shall she rest upon him, and he will not delay to cast her from him.

22 For wisdom is according to her name, and she is not manifest to many.

23 Give ear, my son, and accept my judgement, and refuse not my counsel, 24 and bring your feet into her fetters, and your neck into her chain. 25 Put your shoulder under her, and bear

her, and be not grieved with her bonds. 26 Come to her with all your soul, and keep her ways with your whole power. 27 Search, and seek, and she shall be made known to you, and when you have got hold of her, let her not go. 28 For at the last you shall find her rest, and she shall be turned for you into gladness. 29 And her fetters shall be to you for a covering of strength, and her chains for a robe of glory. 30 For there is a golden ornament upon her, and her bands are a ribbon of blue. 31 You shall put her on as a robe of glory, and shall array you with her as a crown of rejoicing.

32 My son, if you will, you shall be instructed, and if you will yield your soul, you shall be prudent. 33 If you love to hear, you shall receive, and if you incline your ear, you shall be wise.

34 Stand you in the multitude of the elders, and whoso is wise, cleave you to him. 35 Be willing to listen to every godly discourse, and let not the proverbs of understanding escape you.

36 If you see a man of understanding, get you betimes to him, and let your foot wear out the steps of his doors.

37 Let your mind dwell upon the ordinances of the Lord, and meditate continually in his commandments. He shall establish your heart, and your desire of wisdom shall be given to you.

### **Appearances can be deceptive!**

11:2 Commend not a man for his beauty, and abhor not a man for his outward appearance. 3 The bee is little among such as fly, and her fruit is the chief of sweetmeats.

4 Glory not in the putting on of raiment, and exalt not yourself in the day of honour.

For the works of the Lord are wonderful, and his works are hidden among men. 5 Many kings have sat down upon the ground, and one that was never thought of has worn a diadem.

6 Many mighty men have been greatly disgraced, and men of renown have been delivered into other men's hands.

7 Blame not before you have examined: Understand first, and then rebuke. 8 Answer not before you have heard, and interrupt not in the midst of speech.

9 Strive not in a matter that concerns you not, and where sinners judge, sit not you with them.

### **Do not help sinners!**

12:1 If you do good, know to whom you do it, and your good deeds shall have thanks.

2 Do good to a godly man, and you shall find a recompense, and if not from him, yet from the Most High.

3 There shall no good come to him that continueth to do evil, or to him that gives no alms. 4 Give to the godly man, and help not the sinner.

5 Do good to one that is lowly, and give not to an ungodly man: Keep back his bread, and give it not to him, lest he overmaster you thereby. For you shall receive twice as much evil for all the good you shall have done to him. 6 For the Most High also hates sinners, and will repay vengeance to the ungodly.

7 Give to the good man, and help not the sinner.

### **On mankind's freedom**

15:11 Say not you, 'It is through the Lord that I fell away'. For you shall not do the things that he hates. 12 Say not you, 'It is he that caused me to err'. For he has no need of a sinful man. 13 The Lord hates every abomination, and they that fear him love it not. 14 He himself made man from the beginning and left him in the hand of his own counsel. 15 If you will, you shall keep the commandments, and to perform faithfulness is of your own good pleasure. 16 He has set fire and water before you: You shall stretch forth your hand to whichever you will. 17 Before man is life and death, and whichever he likes, it shall be given him. 18 For great is the wisdom of the Lord: He is mighty in

power, and sees all things, 19 and his eyes are upon them that fear him, and he will take knowledge of every work of man. 20 He has not commanded any man to be ungodly, and he has not given any man licence to sin.

### **On irresponsible speech**

4 He that is hasty to trust is light-minded, and he that sins shall offend against his own soul. 5 He that makes merry in his heart shall be condemned, 6 and he that hates talk has the less wickedness.

7 Never repeat what is told you, and you shall fare never the worse. 8 Whether it be of friend or foe, tell it not, and unless it is a sin to you, reveal it not. 9 For he has heard you, and observed you, and when the time comes he will hate you.

10 Hast you heard a word? Let it die with you. Be of good courage, it will not burst you. 11 A fool will travail in pain with a word, as a woman in labour with a child. 12 As an arrow that sticks in the flesh of the thigh, so is a word in a fool's belly.

13 Reprove a friend; it may be he did it not. And if he did something, that he may do it no more. 14 Reprove your neighbour; it may be he said it not. And if he has said it, that he may not say it again.

15 Reprove a friend; for many times there is slander. And trust not every word.

16 There is one that slips, and not from the heart. And who is he that has not sinned with his tongue?

17 Reprove your neighbour before you threaten him, and give place to the law of the Most High.

### **Wisdom, and what some consider to be wisdom**

20 All wisdom is the fear of the Lord, and in all wisdom is the doing of the law. 22 And the knowledge of wickedness is not wisdom, and the prudence of sinners is not counsel.

23 There is a wickedness, and the same is abomination, and there is a fool lacking in wisdom. 24 Better is one that has small understanding, and fears, than one that has much prudence, and transgresses the law.

25 There is an exquisite subtlety, and the same is unjust, and there is one that perverteth favour to gain a judgement. 26 There is one that does wickedly, that hangs down his head with mourning. But inwardly he is full of deceit, 27 bowing down his face, and making as if he were deaf of one ear. Where he is not known, he will be beforehand with you. 28 And if for lack of power he be hindered from sinning, if he find opportunity, he will do mischief.

29 A man shall be known by his look, and one that has understanding shall be known by his face, when you meet him.

30 A man's attire, and grinning laughter, and gait, show what he is.

### **On lazy people and wayward children**

22:1 A slothful man is compared to a stone that is defiled, and every one will hiss him out in his disgrace. 2 A slothful man is compared to the filth of a dunghill: Every man that takes it up will shake out his hand.

3 A father has shame in having begotten an uninstructed son, and a foolish daughter is born to his loss. 4 A prudent daughter shall inherit a husband of her own, and she that brings shame is the grief of him that became the father of her. 5 She that is bold brings shame upon father and husband, and she shall be despised of them both. 6 Unseasonable discourse is as music in mourning, but stripes and correction are wisdom at every season.

### **On sins of fornication**

23:16 Two sorts of men multiply sins, and the third will bring wrath. A hot mind, as a burning fire, will not be quenched till it be consumed. A fornicator in the body of his flesh will never



cease till he has burned out the fire. 17 All bread is sweet to a fornicator: He will not leave off till he die. 18 A man that goes astray from his own bed, saying in his heart, 'Who sees me? Darkness is round about me, and the walls hide me, and no man sees me. Of whom am I afraid? The Most High will not remember my sins.' 19 And the eyes of men are his terror. And he knows not that the eyes of the Lord are ten thousand times brighter than the sun, beholding all the ways of men, and looking into secret places. 20 All things were known to him or ever they were created, and in like manner also after they were perfected. 21 This man shall be punished in the streets of the city, and where he suspected not he shall be taken.

22 So also a wife that leaves her husband, and brings in an heir by a stranger. 23 For first, she was disobedient in the law of the Most High, and secondly, she trespassed against her own husband, and thirdly, she played the adulteress in whoredom, and brought in children by a stranger. 24 She shall be brought out into the congregation, and upon her children shall there be visitation. 25 Her children shall not spread into roots, and her branches shall bear no fruit. 26 She shall leave her memory for a curse, and her reproach shall not be blotted out. 27 And they that are left behind shall know that there is nothing better than the fear of the Lord, and nothing sweeter than to take heed to the commandments of the Lord.

### **Who deserves praise and who does not**

25:1 In three things I was beautified, and stood up beautiful before the Lord and men: The concord of brethren, and friendship of neighbours, and a woman and her husband that walk together in agreement.

2 But three sorts of men my soul hates, and I am greatly offended at their life: A poor man that is haughty, and a rich man that is a liar, and an old man that is an adulterer lacking understanding. 3 In your youth you have not gathered, and how

should you find in your old age? 4 How beautiful a thing is judgement for grey hairs, and for elders to know counsel! 5 How beautiful is the wisdom of old men, and thought and counsel to men that are in honour! 6 Much experience is the crown of old men, and their glorying is the fear of the Lord.

7 There be nine things that I have thought of, and in mine heart counted happy, and the tenth I will utter with my tongue: A man that has joy of his children, and a man that lives and looks upon the fall of his enemies. 8 Happy is he that dwells with a wife of understanding, and he that has not slipped with his tongue, and he that has not served a man that is unworthy of him. 9 Happy is he that has found prudence, and he that discourseth in the ears of them that listen. 10 How great is he that has found wisdom! Yet is there none above him that fears the Lord. 11 The fear of the Lord passes all things. He that holds it, to whom shall he be likened?

## About women

25:13 Give me any plague but the plague of the heart, and any wickedness but the wickedness of a woman. 14 Any calamity, but a calamity from them that hate me, and any vengeance, but the vengeance of enemies.

15 There is no head above the head of a serpent, and there is no wrath above the wrath of an enemy.

16 I will rather dwell with a lion and a dragon, than keep house with a wicked woman. 17 The wickedness of a woman changes her look, and darkens her countenance as a bear does. 18 Her husband shall sit at meat among his neighbours, and when he hears it he sighs bitterly. 19 All malice is but little to the malice of a woman: Let the portion of a sinner fall on her.

20 As the going up a sandy way is to the feet of the aged, so is a wife full of words to a quiet man. 21 Throw not yourself upon the beauty of a woman, and desire not a woman for her beauty.

22 There is anger, and impudence, and great reproach, if a woman maintains her husband.

23 A wicked woman is abasement of heart, and sadness of countenance, and a wounded heart: A woman that will not make her husband happy is as hands that hang down, and palsied knees.

24 From a woman was the beginning of sin, and because of her we all die.

25 Give not water an outlet, neither to a wicked woman freedom of speech. 26 If she go not as you would have her, cut her off from your flesh.

### **Praise for the good wife**

26:13 The grace of a wife will delight her husband, and her knowledge will fatten his bones. 14 A silent woman is a gift of the Lord, and there is nothing so much worth as a well-instructed soul. 15 A shamefast woman is grace upon grace, and there is no price worthy of a continent soul. 16 As the sun when it arises in the highest places of the Lord, so is the beauty of a good wife in the ordering of a man's house. 17 As the lamp that shineth upon the holy candlestick, so is the beauty of the face in ripe age. 18 As the golden pillars are upon a base of silver, so are beautiful feet with the breasts of one that is steadfast.

27:1 Many have sinned for a thing indifferent, and he that seeks to multiply gain will turn his eye away. 2 A nail will stick fast between the joinings of stones, and sin will thrust itself in between buying and selling. 3 Unless a man holds on diligently in the fear of the Lord, his house shall soon be overthrown.

### **Your words betray you!**

4 In the shaking of a sieve, the refuse remains; so the filth of man in his reasoning. 5 The furnace will prove the potter's vessels, and the trial of a man is in his reasoning. 6 The fruit of a tree

declares the husbandry thereof; so is the utterance of the thought of the heart of a man. 7 Praise no man before you hear him reason, for this is the trial of men.

8 If you follow righteousness, you shall obtain her, and put her on, as a long robe of glory. 9 Birds will resort to their like, and truth will return to them that practise her. 10 The lion lies in wait for prey, so does sin for them that work iniquity.

11 The discourse of a godly man is always wisdom, but the foolish man changes as the moon.

12 Among men void of understanding observe the opportunity, but stay continually among the thoughtful.

13 The discourse of fools is an offence, and their laughter is in the wantonness of sin. 14 The talk of a man of many oaths will make the hair stand upright, and their strife makes one stop his ears. 15 The strife of the proud is a shedding of blood, and their reviling of each other is a grievous thing to hear.

### **On dealing with secrets**

16 He that reveals secrets destroys credit, and shall not find a friend to his mind. 17 Love a friend, and keep faith with him. But if you reveal his secrets, you shall not pursue after him, 18 for as a man has destroyed his enemy, so have you destroyed the friendship of your neighbour. 19 And as a bird which you have loosed out of your hand, so have you let your neighbour go, and you will not catch him again. 20 Pursue him not, for he is gone far away, and has escaped as a gazelle out of the snare. 21 For a wound may be bound up, and after reviling there may be a reconcilment. But he that reveals secrets has lost hope.

### **On hypocrisy and falsehood**

22 One that winks with the eye contriveth evil things, and no man will remove him from it. 23 When you are present, he will speak sweetly, and will admire your words. But afterward he will writhe his mouth, and set a trap for you in your words. 24 I

have hated many things, but nothing like him. And the Lord will hate him.

25 One that casts a stone on high casts it on his own head, and a deceitful stroke will open wounds. 26 He that digs a pit shall fall into it, and he that sets a snare shall be taken therein. 27 He that does evil things, they shall roll upon him, and he shall not know whence they have come to him.

28 Mockery and reproach are from the haughty, and vengeance, as a lion, shall lie in wait for him. 29 They that rejoice at the fall of the godly shall be taken in a snare, and anguish shall consume them before they die.

### **Forgiveness instead of vengeance**

30 Wrath and anger, these also are abominations, and a sinful man shall possess them.

28:1 He that takes vengeance shall find vengeance from the Lord, and he will surely make firm his sins.

2 Forgive your neighbour the hurt that he has done you, and then your sins shall be pardoned when you pray. 3 Man cherisheth anger against man, and does he seek healing from the Lord?

4 Upon a man like himself he has no mercy, and does he make supplication for his own sins? 5 He being himself flesh nourishes wrath. Who shall make atonement for his sins?

6 Remember your last end, and cease from enmity. Remember corruption and death, and abide in the commandments. 7 Remember the commandments, and be not angry with your neighbour. and remember the covenant of the Highest, and wink at ignorance.

### **A warning against contentiousness**

8 Abstain from strife, and you shall diminish your sins. For a passionate man will kindle strife. 9 and a man that is a sinner

will trouble friends, and will make debate among them that be at peace.

10 As is the fuel of the fire, so will it burn. And as the stoutness of the strife is, so will it burn. As is the strength of the man, so will be his wrath. And as is his wealth, so will he exalt his anger.

11 A contention begun in haste kindles a fire, and a hasty fighting sheds blood.

12 If you blow a spark, it shall burn, and if you spit upon it, it shall be quenched. And both these shall come out of your mouth.

### **A warning against malicious tongues**

13 Curse the whisperer and double-tongued, for he has destroyed many that were at peace. 14 A third person's tongue has shaken many, and dispersed them from nation to nation. And it has pulled down strong cities, and overthrown the houses of great men. 15 A third person's tongue has cast out brave women, and deprived them of their labours. 16 He that hearkens to it shall not find rest, nor shall he dwell quietly.



17 The stroke of a whip makes a mark in the flesh, but the stroke of a tongue will break bones. 18 Many have fallen by the edge of the sword, yet not so many as they that have fallen because of the tongue. 19 Happy is he that is sheltered from it – he that has not passed through the wrath thereof, he that has not drawn its yoke, and he that has not been bound with its bands. 20 For the yoke thereof is a yoke of iron, and the bands thereof are bands of brass. 21 The death thereof is an evil death, and Hades were better than it.

22 It shall not have rule over godly men, and they shall not be burned in its flame. 23 They that forsake the Lord shall fall into it, and it shall burn among them, and shall not be quenched. It shall be sent forth upon them as a lion, and as a leopard it shall destroy them.

24 Look that you hedge your possession about with thorns. Bind up your silver and your gold, 25 and make a balance and a weight for your words, and make a door and a bar for your mouth. 26 Take heed lest you slip therein; lest you fall before one that lies in wait.

## On raising children

30:1 He that loves his son will continue to lay stripes upon him, that he may have joy of him in the end. 2 He that chastises his son shall have profit of him, and shall glory of him among his acquaintance. 3 He that teaches his son shall provoke his enemy to jealousy, and before friends he shall rejoice of him.

4 His father dieth, and is as though he had not died, for he has left one behind him like himself. 5 In his life, he saw and rejoiced in him, and when he died, he sorrowed not. 6 He left behind him an avenger against his enemies, and one to requite kindness to his friends.

7 He that makes too much of his son shall bind up his wounds, and his heart will be troubled at every cry.

8 An unbroken horse becomes stubborn, and a son left at large becomes headstrong.

9 Cocker your child, and he shall make you afraid. Play with him, and he will grieve you. 10 Laugh not with him, lest you have sorrow with him, and you shall gnash your teeth in the end.

11 Give him no liberty in his youth, and wink not at his follies.

12 Bow down his neck in his youth, and beat him on the sides while he is a child, lest he wax stubborn and be disobedient to you. And there shall be sorrow to your soul. 13 Chastise your son, and take pains with him, lest his shameless behaviour be an offence to you.

## On health

14 Better is a poor man, being sound and strong of constitution, than a rich man that is plagued in his body.

15 Health and a good constitution are better than all gold, and a strong body than wealth without measure.

16 There are no riches better than health of body, and there is no gladness above the joy of the heart.

17 Death is better than a bitter life, and eternal rest than a continual sickness.

18 Good things poured out upon a mouth that is closed are as messes of meat laid upon a grave. 19 What does an offering profit an idol? For neither shall it eat nor smell. So is he that is afflicted of the Lord, 20 seeing with his eyes and groaning, as a eunuch embracing a virgin and groaning.

21 Give not over your soul to sorrow, and afflict not yourself in your own counsel. 22 Gladness of heart is the life of a man, and the joyfulness of a man is length of days. 23 Love your own soul, and comfort your heart, and remove sorrow far from you. For sorrow has destroyed many, and there is no profit therein.

24 Envy and wrath shorten a



man's days, and care brings old age before the time. 25 A cheerful and good heart will have a care of his meat and diet.

### **On the dangers of wealth**

31:1 Wakefulness that comes of riches consumes the flesh, and the anxiety thereof puts away sleep. 2 Wakeful anxiety will crave slumber, and in a sore disease sleep will be broken.

3 A rich man toileth in gathering money together, and when he rests, he is filled with his good things. 4 A poor man toileth in lack of substance, and when he rests, he becomes needy.

5 He that loves gold shall not be justified, and he that follows destruction shall himself have his fill of it. 6 Many have been given over to ruin for the sake of gold, and their perdition meets them face to face. 7 It is a stumbling block to them that sacrifice to it, and every fool shall be taken therewith.

8 Blessed is the rich that is found without blemish, and that goes not after gold. 9 Who is he? And we will call him blessed, for wonderful things has he done among his people. 10 Who has been tried thereby, and found perfect? Then let him glory. Who has had the power to transgress, and has not transgressed? And to do evil, and has not done it? 11 His goods shall be made sure, and the congregation shall declare his alms.

### **On moderation when eating and drinking**

12 Sittest you at a great table? Be not greedy upon it, and say not, 'Many are the things upon it.' 13 Remember that an evil eye is a wicked thing. What has been created more evil than an eye? Therefore it sheds tears from every face.

14 Stretch not your hand wherever it looks, and thrust not yourself with it into the dish.

15 Consider your neighbour's liking by your own, and be discreet in every point. 16 Eat, as becomes a man, those things which are set before you, and eat not greedily, lest you be hated. 17 Be first to leave off for manners' sake, and be not insatiable,

lest you offend. 18 And if you sit among many, reach not out your hand before them.

19 How sufficient to a well-mannered man is a very little, and he does not breathe hard upon his bed.

20 Healthy sleep comes of moderate eating. He rises early, and his wits are with him. The pain of wakefulness and colic and griping are with an insatiable man.

21 And if you have been forced to eat, rise up in the midst thereof, and you shall have rest.

22 Hear me, my son, and despise me not, and at the last you shall find my words true. In all your works be quick, and no disease shall come to you.

### **Proper conduct during a feast**

32:1 Have they made you ruler of a feast? Be not lifted up. Be you among them as one of them, take thought for them, and so sit down. 2 And when you have done all your office, take your place, that you may be gladdened on their account, and receive a crown for your well ordering. 3 Speak, you that are the elder, for it becomes you, but with sound knowledge, and hinder not music. 4 Pour not out talk where there is a performance of music, and display not your wisdom out of season. 5 As a signet of carbuncle in a setting of gold, so is a concert of music in a banquet of wine. 6 As a signet of emerald in a work of gold, so is a strain of music with pleasant wine. 7 Speak, young man, if there be need of you, yet scarcely if you be twice asked. 8 Sum up your speech, many things in few words. Be as one that knows and yet holds his tongue. 9 If you be among great men, behave not as their equal, and when another is speaking, make not much babbling. 10 Before thunder speedeth lightning, and before a shamefast man favour shall go forth. 11 Rise up betimes, and be not the last. Get you home quickly and loiter not. 12 There take your pastime, and do what is in your heart, and sin not by proud

speech. 13 And for these things bless him that made you, and gives you to drink freely of his good things.

### **Living within the law**

14 He that fears the Lord will receive his discipline, and they that seek him early shall find favour. 15 He that seeks the law shall be filled therewith, but the hypocrite shall stumble thereat. 16 They that fear the Lord shall find judgement, and shall kindle righteous acts as a light. 17 A sinful man shunneth reproof, and will find a judgement according to his will. 18 A man of counsel will not neglect a thought. A strange and proud man will not crouch in fear, even after he has done a thing by himself without counsel. 19 Do nothing without counsel, and when you have once done, repent not. 20 Go not in a way of conflict, and stumble not in stony places. 21 Be not confident in a smooth way, 22 and beware of your own children. 23 In every work trust your own soul, for this is the keeping of the commandments. 24 He that believes the law gives heed to the commandment, and he that trusts in the Lord shall suffer no loss. 33:1 There shall no evil happen to him that fears the Lord, but in temptation once and again will he deliver him. 2 A wise man will not hate the law, but he that is a hypocrite therein is as a ship in a storm. 3 A man of understanding will put his trust in the law, and the law is faithful to him, as when one asks at the oracle.

### **Remaining independent**

19 To son and wife, to brother and friend, give not power over you while you live. And give not your goods to another, lest you repent and make supplication for them again. 20 Whilst you yet live, and breath is in you, give not yourself over to anybody. 21 For better it is that your children should supplicate you, than that you should look to the hand of your sons. 22 In all your works keep the upper hand; bring not a stain on your honour.

23 In the day that you endest the days of your life, and in the time of death, distribute your inheritance.

### **Taking God seriously**

34:13 The spirit of those that fear the Lord shall live, for their hope is upon him that saves them.

14 Whoso fears the Lord shall not be afraid, and shall not play the coward, for he is his hope.

15 Blessed is the soul of him that fears the Lord. To whom does he give heed? And who is his stay?

16 The eyes of the Lord are upon them that love him. A mighty protection and strong stay, a cover from the hot blast, a cover from the noonday, a guard from stumbling, and a succour from falling. 17 He raises up the soul, and enlighteneth the eyes. He gives healing, life, and blessing.

Nicole's wedding, here with her mother



# Now we come to the New Testament – Jesus Christ is born!

**Listen carefully to what Jesus says!**

**Some questions: Will there be a New World?**

**When will Jesus Christ return?**

**You will find the answers on the following pages.**

## Matthew

The effect of the Sermon on the Mount

5 When Jesus saw the crowd, he climbed a mountain and sat down. His disciples \* came to him.

2a Then he began to speak and teach her what God now asked of his people.

## Who can be happy ... (The Beatitudes)

2b He said:

3 »Everyone can be happy

who only expect something from God -  
with God they will live in his new world.

4 Everyone can look forward to that  
who suffer from this hopeless world -  
God will put an end to their suffering.

5 Everyone can look forward to that  
who are oppressed and renounce violence -  
God will give them the earth they can own.

6 Everyone can look forward to that  
who are hungry and thirsty for it  
that God's just will prevails on earth -  
God will satisfy their hunger and thirst.

7 Everyone can look forward to that  
who are merciful -

God will also be gracious to them.

8 Everyone can look forward to that  
who are pure in heart \* -

You will see God.

9 Everyone can look forward to that  
that makes peace -

God will accept her as his sons and daughters.

10 Everyone can look forward to that  
who are persecuted because they do what God wants -  
with God they will live in his new world.

11 You can be happy if they insult you and persecute and slander  
you because you belong to me. 12 Rejoice and rejoice, because  
with God a rich reward awaits you. This is how they treated the  
prophets \* before you. «

7:28 When Jesus had finished saying these things, the multitudes  
were astonished at his teaching, 29 for he taught them with  
authority, and not like the scribes.

## **The disciples' task**

5:13 “You are the salt of the earth, but if the salt has lost its  
flavour, with what will it be salted? It is then good for nothing,  
but to be cast out and trodden under the feet of men.

14 You are the light of the world. A city located on a hill can't  
be hidden. 15 Neither do you light a lamp, and put it under a  
measuring basket, but on a stand – and it shines to all who are in  
the house. 16 Even so, let your light shine before men, that they  
may see your good works, and glorify your Father who is in  
heaven.”

## **Take very seriously God's will, as outlined in the law...**

17 “Don't think that I came to destroy the law or the prophets. I  
didn't come to destroy, but to fulfil.

18 For most certainly, I tell you, until heaven and earth pass away, not even one smallest letter or one tiny pen stroke shall in any way pass away from the law, until all things are accomplished. 19 Whoever, therefore, shall break one of these least commandments, and teach others to do so, shall be called least in the Kingdom of Heaven. But whoever shall do and teach them shall be called great in the Kingdom of Heaven.

20 For I tell you that unless your righteousness exceeds that of the scribes and Pharisees, there is no way you will enter into the Kingdom of Heaven.”

### **...in the commandment not to murder**

21 “You have heard that it was said to the ancient ones, ‘You shall not murder;’ and ‘Whoever murders will be in danger of the judgment.’ 22 But I tell you, that everyone who is angry with his brother without a cause will be in danger of the judgment. And whoever says to his brother, ‘Rascal!’ will be in danger of the council. And whoever says, ‘You fool!’ will be in danger of the fire of Gehenna.

23 If therefore you are offering your gift at the altar, and there remember that your brother has anything against you, 24 leave your gift there before the altar, and go your way. First be reconciled to your brother, and then come and offer your gift.

25 Agree with your adversary quickly, while you are with him on the way – lest perhaps the prosecutor deliver you to the judge, and the judge deliver you to the officer, and you be cast into prison. 26 Most certainly I tell you, you shall by no means get out of there, until you have paid the last penny.”

### **...in the commandment not to swear false vows**

33 “Again you have heard that it was said to them of old time, ‘You shall not make false vows, but shall perform to the Lord your vows.’ 34 But I tell you, don’t swear at all: Neither by heaven, for it is the throne of God, 35 nor by the earth, for it is

the footstool of his feet, nor by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great King. 36 Neither shall you swear by your head, for you can't make one hair white or black. 37 But let your 'Yes' be 'Yes' and your 'No' be 'No.' Whatever is more than these is of the evil one."

### **True and false piety...**

6:1 "Be careful that you don't do your charitable giving before men, to be seen by them, or else you have no reward from your Father who is in heaven."

### **...when donating to the needy**

2 "Therefore when you do merciful deeds, don't sound a trumpet before yourself, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may get glory from men. Most certainly I tell you, they have received their reward. 3 But when you do merciful deeds, don't let your left hand know what your right hand does, 4 so that your merciful deeds may be in secret. Then your Father who sees in secret will reward you openly."

### **...when praying**

5 "When you pray, you shall not be as the hypocrites, for they love to stand and pray in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen by men. Most certainly, I tell you, they have received their reward. 6 But you, when you pray, enter into your inner room, and having shut your door, pray to your Father who is in secret,

**End times: What is coming to us? Plagues, wars, poverty,  
temptation/ Matt. 24**

<https://youtu.be/z1pmuKxiHv0>



and your Father who sees in secret will reward you openly. 7 In praying, don't use vain repetitions, as the Gentiles do. For they think that they will be heard for their much speaking. 8 Therefore don't be like them, for your Father knows what things you need, before you ask him. 9 Pray like this:

## **The "Lord's Prayer"**

Our Father, who art in heaven,  
hallowed be thy Name.  
Thy kingdom come,  
thy will be done,  
on earth as it is in heaven.  
Give us this day our daily bread,  
and forgive us our trespasses,  
as we forgive those  
who trespass against us.  
And lead us not into temptation,  
but deliver us from evil.  
For thine is the kingdom,  
the power, and the glory,  
for ever and ever. Amen.”

The "Lord's Prayer" is partly wrong from Hebrew to German  
been translated. (According to Prof. Dr. Ruth Lapide Jüdin)  
"Because God does not tempt us!" Jakobus 1, 12-16

**Dr. Lothar Gassmann: OCCULTISM, ESOTERICS, MAGIC,  
ALTERNATIVE MEDICINE under scrutiny**

<https://youtu.be/hS3eDQ2QYNw>

## **The relationship with possessions**

19 “Don't lay up treasures for yourselves on the earth, where moth and rust consume, and where thieves break through and

steal. 20 But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust consume, and where thieves don't break through and steal. 21 For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also.

22 The lamp of the body is the eye. If therefore your eye is sound, your whole body will be full of light. 23 But if your eye is evil, your whole body will be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in you is darkness, how great is the darkness!"

### Undivided service

24 "No one can serve two masters, for either he will hate the one and love the other, or else he will be devoted to one and despise the other. You can't serve both God and Mammon. 25 Therefore I tell you, don't be anxious for your life, what you will eat, or what you will drink, nor yet for your body and what you will wear. Isn't life more than food, and the body more than clothing? 26 See the birds of the sky, that they don't sow, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns. Your heavenly Father feeds them. Aren't you of much more value than they?

27 Which of you, by being anxious, can add one moment to his lifespan? 28 Why are you anxious about clothing? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow. They don't toil, neither do they spin, 29 yet I tell you that even Solomon in all his glory was not dressed like one of these. 30 But if God so clothes the grass of the field, which today exists, and tomorrow is thrown into the oven, won't he much more clothe you, you of little faith?

31 Therefore don't be anxious, saying, 'What will we eat?', 'What will we drink?' or, 'With what will we be clothed?' 32 For the Gentiles seek after all these things, and your heavenly Father knows that you need all these things. 33 But seek first God's Kingdom, and his righteousness, and all these things will be given to you as well. 34 Therefore don't be anxious for tomorrow, for tomorrow will be anxious for itself. Each day's own evil is sufficient."

## Matthe

### Do not judge

7:1 “Don’t judge, so that you won’t be judged. 2 For with whatever judgment you judge, you will be judged. And with whatever measure you measure, it will be measured to you. 3 Why do you see the speck that is in your brother’s eye, but don’t consider the beam that is in your own eye? 4 Or how will you tell your brother, ‘Let me remove the speck from your eye,’ and behold, the beam is in your own eye? 5 You hypocrite! First remove the beam out of your own eye, and then you can see clearly to remove the speck out of your brother’s eye.”

### Pray to God with absolute confidence

7 “Ask, and it will be given you. Seek, and you will find. Knock, and it will be opened for you. 8 For everyone who asks receives. He who seeks, finds. To him who knocks, it will be opened. 9 Or who is there among you, who, if his son asks him for bread, will give him a stone? 10 Or if he asks for a fish, who will give him a serpent? 11 If you then, being evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father who is in heaven give good things to those who ask him!”

### A simple and basic rule

12 “Therefore whatever you desire for men to do to you, you shall also do to them, for this is the law and the prophets.”

### A final reminder

13 “Enter in by the narrow gate, for wide is the gate and broad is the way that leads to destruction, and many are those who enter in by it. 14 How narrow is the gate and restricted is the way that leads to life! Few are those who find it.”

## **A warning against false prophets**

15 “Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep’s clothing, but inwardly are ravening wolves. 16 By their fruits you will know them. Do you gather grapes from thorns, or figs from thistles? 17 Even so, every good tree produces good fruit, but the corrupt tree produces evil fruit. 18 A good tree can’t produce evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree produce good fruit. 19 Every tree that doesn’t grow good fruit is cut down, and thrown into the fire. 20 Therefore by their fruits you will know them.”

## **A warning against self-deception**

21 “Not everyone who says to me, ‘Lord, Lord,’ will enter into the Kingdom of Heaven, but he who does the will of my Father who is in heaven. 22 Many will tell me in that day, ‘Lord, Lord, didn’t we prophesy in your name, in your name cast out demons, and in your name do many mighty works?’ 23 Then I will tell them, ‘I never knew you. Depart from me, you who work iniquity.’”

## **The parable of the house on the rock**

24 “Everyone therefore who hears these words of mine, and does them, I will liken him to a wise man, who built his house on a rock. 25 The rain came down, the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat on that house, and it didn’t fall, for it was founded on the rock. 26 Everyone who hears these words of mine, and doesn’t do them will be like a foolish man, who built his house on the sand. 27 The rain came down, the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat on that house, and it fell—and great was its fall.”

**When We All Get To Heaven All Time Hymn by Lifebreakthrough**

<https://youtu.be/VtHMSLF05A4>

## Matthew

### Jesus cures a paralysed man

9:1 He entered into a boat, and crossed over, and came into his own city. 2 Behold, they brought to him a man who was paralysed, lying on a bed. Jesus, seeing their faith, said to the paralytic, “Son, cheer up! Your sins are forgiven you.”

3 Behold, some of the scribes said to themselves, “This man blasphemeth.”

4 Jesus, knowing their thoughts, said, “Why do you think evil in your hearts? 5 For which is easier, to say, ‘Your sins are forgiven,’ or to say, ‘Get up, and walk?’ 6 But that you may know that the Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins...” Then he said to the paralytic, “Get up, and take up your mat, and go to your house.”

7 He arose and departed to his house. 8 But when the multitudes saw it, they marvelled and glorified God, who had given such authority to men.

### Jesus calls Matthew and eats with the tax collectors

9 As Jesus passed by from there, he saw a man called Matthew sitting at the tax collection office. He said to him, “Follow me.” He got up and followed him. 10 As he sat in the house, behold, many tax collectors and sinners came and sat down with Jesus and his disciples. 11 When the Pharisees saw it, they said to his disciples, “Why does your teacher eat with tax collectors and sinners?”

12 When Jesus heard it, he said to them, “Those who are healthy have no need for a physician, but those who are sick do. 13 But you go and learn what this means: ‘I desire mercy, and not sacrifice,’ for I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.”

## **The wedding has begun**

14 Then John's disciples came to him, saying, "Why do we and the Pharisees fast often, but your disciples don't fast?"

15 Jesus said to them, "Can the friends of the bridegroom mourn, as long as the bridegroom is with them? But the days will come when the bridegroom will be taken away from them, and then they will fast. 16 No one puts a piece of unshrunk cloth on an old garment, for the patch would tear away from the garment, and a worse hole is made. 17 Neither do people put new wine into old wine skins, or else the skins would burst, and the wine be spilled, and the skins ruined. No, they put new wine into fresh wine skins, and both are preserved."

## **Jesus cures an ill woman and revives a girl from death**

18 While he told these things to them, behold, a ruler came and worshiped him, saying, "My daughter has just died, but come and lay your hand on her, and she will live."

19 Jesus got up and followed him, as did his disciples. 20 Behold, a woman who had an issue of blood for twelve years came behind him, and touched the fringe of his garment, 21 for she said within herself, "If I just touch his garment, I will be made well."

22 But Jesus, turning around and seeing her, said, "Daughter, cheer up! Your faith has made you well." And the woman was made well from that hour.

23 When Jesus came into the ruler's house, and saw the flute players, and the crowd in noisy disorder, 24 he said to them, "Make room, because the girl isn't dead, but sleeping."

They were ridiculing him. 25 But when the crowd was put out, he entered in, took her by the hand, and the girl arose. 26 The report of this went out into all that land.

## **Jesus cures two blind men**

27 As Jesus passed by from there, two blind men followed him, calling out and saying, “Have mercy on us, son of David!”

28 When he had come into the house, the blind men came to him. Jesus said to them, “Do you believe that I am able to do this?”

They told him, “Yes, Lord.”

29 Then he touched their eyes, saying, “According to your faith be it done to you.” 30 Their eyes were opened. Jesus strictly commanded them, saying, “See that no one knows about this.” 31 But they went out and spread abroad his fame in all that land.

## **Jesus cures a mute; Varying reactions**

32 As they went out, behold, a mute man who was demon-possessed was brought to him. 33 When the demon was cast out, the mute man spoke. The multitudes marvelled, saying, “Nothing like this has ever been seen in Israel!”

34 But the Pharisees said, “By the prince of the demons, he casts out demons.”

## **Matthew**

### **What defiles**

15:10 He summoned the multitude, and said to them, “Hear, and understand. 11 That which enters into the mouth doesn’t defile the man, but that which proceeds out of the mouth, this defiles the man.”

12 Then the disciples came, and said to him, “Do you know that the Pharisees were offended, when they heard this saying?”

13 But he answered, “Every plant which my heavenly Father didn’t plant will be uprooted. 14 Leave them alone. They are blind guides of the blind. If the blind guide the blind, both will fall into a pit.”

15 Peter answered him, “Explain the parable to us.”

16 So Jesus said, “Do you also still not understand? 17 Don’t you understand that whatever goes into the mouth passes into the belly, and then out of the body? 18 But the things which proceed out of the mouth come out of the heart, and they defile the man. 19 For out of the heart come evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, sexual sins, thefts, false testimony and blasphemies. 20 These are the things which defile the man, but to eat with unwashed hands doesn’t defile the man.”

### **A gentile woman’s faith**

21 Jesus went out from there, and withdrew into the region of Tyre and Sidon. 22 Behold, a Canaanite woman came out from those borders, and cried, saying, “Have mercy on me, Lord, you son of David! My daughter is severely possessed by a demon!” 23 But he answered her not a word.

His disciples came and begged him, saying, “Send her away, for she cries after us.”

24 But he answered, “I wasn’t sent to anyone but the lost sheep of the house of Israel.”

25 But she came and worshiped him, saying, “Lord, help me.”

26 But he answered, “It is not appropriate to take the children’s bread and throw it to the dogs.”

27 But she said, “Yes, Lord, but even the dogs eat the crumbs which fall from their masters’ table.”

28 Then Jesus answered her, “Woman, great is your faith! Be it done to you even as you desire.” And her daughter was healed from that hour.

## **Matthew 18**

### **Against the desire for prestige**

18:1 In that hour the disciples came to Jesus, saying, “Who then is greatest in the Kingdom of Heaven?” 2 Jesus called a little child to himself, and set him in the middle of them, 3 and said, “Most certainly I tell you: Unless you turn and become as little



children, you will in no way enter into the Kingdom of Heaven. 4 Whoever therefore humbles himself as this little child, the same is the greatest in the Kingdom of Heaven. 5 Whoever receives one such little child in my name receives me.”

## **The danger of wealth**

19:16 Behold, one came to him and said, “Good teacher, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life?”

17 He said to him, “Why do you call me good? No one is good but one: That is God. But if you want to enter into life, keep the commandments.”

18 He said to him, “Which ones?”

Jesus said, ”‘You shall not murder.’ ‘You shall not commit adultery.’ ‘You shall not steal.’ ‘You shall not offer false testimony.’ 19 ‘Honour your father and your mother.’ And, ‘You shall love your neighbour as yourself.’”

20 The young man said to him, “All these things I have observed from my youth. What do I still lack?”

21 Jesus said to him, “If you want to be perfect, go, sell what you have, and give to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven. And come, follow me.” 22 But when the young man heard the saying, he went away sad, for he was one who had great possessions. 23 Jesus said to his disciples, “Most certainly I say to you, a rich man will enter into the Kingdom of Heaven with difficulty. 24 Again I tell you, it is easier for a camel to go through a needle’s eye, than for a rich man to enter into God’s Kingdom.”

25 When the disciples heard it, they were exceedingly astonished, saying, “Who then can be saved?”

26 Looking at them, Jesus said, “With men this is impossible, but with God all things are possible.”

## **Matthew 22**

### **The most important commandment**

22:34 When the Pharisees heard that Jesus had silenced the Sadducees, they gathered themselves together. 35 One of them, a lawyer, asked him a question, testing him. 36 “Teacher, which is the greatest commandment in the law?”

37 Jesus said to him, ”“You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind.’ 38 This is the first and great commandment. 39 A second likewise is this, ‘You shall love your neighbour as yourself.’ 40 The whole law and the prophets depend on these two commandments.”

## Matthew

ADDRESS ABOUT THE END OF DAYS AND THE LAST JUDGMENT (Chapter 24–25)

### **Announcement of the temple’s destruction**

24:1 Jesus went out from the temple, and was going on his way. His disciples came to him to show him the buildings of the temple. 2 But he answered them, “You see all of these things, don’t you? Most certainly I tell you, there will not be left here one stone on another that will not be thrown down.”

### **The beginning of the end**

3 As he sat on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came to him privately, saying, “Tell us, when will these things be? What is the sign of your coming, and of the end of the age?”

4 Jesus answered them, “Be careful that no one leads you astray. 5 For many will come in my name, saying, ‘I am the Christ,’ and will lead many astray. 6 You will hear of wars and rumours of wars. See that you aren’t troubled, for all this must happen, but the end is not yet. 7 For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom, and there will be famines, plagues and earthquakes in various places. 8 But all these things are the beginning of birth pains.

## **The persecution of the disciples**

9 “Then they will deliver you up to oppression, and will kill you. You will be hated by all of the nations for my name’s sake. 10 Then many will stumble, and will deliver up one another, and will hate one another. 11 Many false prophets will arise and will lead many astray. 12 Because iniquity will be multiplied, the love of many will grow cold. 13 But he who endures to the end, the same will be saved. 14 This Good News of the Kingdom will be preached in the whole world for a testimony to all the nations, and then the end will come.”

## **The final period of horror**

15 “When, therefore, you see the abomination of desolation, which was spoken of through Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place (let the reader understand), 16 then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains. 17 Let him who is on the housetop not go down to take out the things that are in his house. 18 Let him who is in the field not return back to get his clothes. 19 But woe to those who are with child and to nursing mothers in those days! 20 Pray that your flight will not be in the winter, nor on a Sabbath, 21 for then there will be great oppression such as has not been from the beginning of the world until now, no, nor ever will be. 22 Unless those days had been shortened, no flesh would have been saved. But for the sake of the chosen ones, those days will be shortened.

23 “Then if any man tells you, ‘Behold, here is the Christ,’ or, ‘There,’ don’t believe it. 24 For there will arise false Christs and false prophets, and they will show great signs and wonders so as to lead astray, if possible, even the chosen ones.

25 “Behold, I have told you beforehand. 26 If therefore they tell you, ‘Behold, he is in the wilderness,’ don’t go out. Or, ‘Behold, he is in the inner rooms,’ don’t believe it. 27 For as the lightning flashes from the east, and is seen even to the west, so will be the

coming of the Son of Man. 28 For wherever the carcass is, there is where the vultures gather together.”

### **The earth’s judge arrives**

29 “But immediately after the oppression of those days, the sun will be darkened, the moon will not give its light, the stars will fall from the sky, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken, 30 and then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in the sky. Then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of the sky with power and great glory. 31 He will send out his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they will gather together his chosen ones from the four winds, from one end of the sky to the other.”

### **The parable of the fig tree**

32 “Now from the fig tree learn this parable. When its branch has become tender and produces its leaves, you know that the summer is near. 33 Even so you also, when you see all these things, know that it is near, even at the doors. 34 Most certainly I tell you, this generation will not pass away until all these things are accomplished. 35 Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will not pass away.”

### **The end comes when unexpected**

36 “But no one knows of that day and hour, not even the angels of heaven, except my Father only.

37 As the days of Noah were, so will be the coming of the Son of Man. 38 For as in those days which were before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ship. 39 And they didn’t know until the flood came and took them all away. So will be the coming of the Son of Man. 40 Then two men will be in the field. One will be taken and one will be left. 41 Two women grinding at the mill, one will be taken and one will be left. 42 Watch therefore, for you don’t know in what hour your

Lord comes. 43 But know this, that if the master of the house had known in what watch of the night the thief was coming, he would have watched, and would not have allowed his house to be broken into. 44 Therefore also be ready, for in an hour that you don't expect, the Son of Man will come."

### **The good servant**

45 "Who then is the faithful and wise servant, whom his lord has set over his household to give them their food in due season? 46 Blessed is that servant whom his lord finds doing so when he comes. 47 Most certainly I tell you that he will set him over all that he has. 48 But if that evil servant should say in his heart, 'My lord is delaying his coming,' 49 and begins to beat his fellow servants and eat and drink with the drunkards, 50 the lord of that servant will come in a day when he doesn't expect it, and in an hour when he doesn't know it, 51 and will cut him in pieces and appoint his portion with the hypocrites. There is where the weeping and grinding of teeth will be."

**Amazing Grace - Dueto Sax e Violino Cover**

<https://youtu.be/FWTlMe3Mzvo>

Luke 16

### **...and the example of wealth (The rich man and poor Lazarus)**

16:19 "Now there was a certain rich man, and he was clothed in purple and fine linen, living in luxury every day. 20 A certain beggar, named Lazarus, was laid at his gate, full of sores, 21 and desiring to be fed with the crumbs that fell from the rich man's table. Yes, even the dogs came and licked his sores. 22 The beggar died, and he was carried away by the angels to Abraham's bosom. The rich man also died, and was buried. 23 In Hades, he lifted up his eyes, being in torment, and saw Abraham far off, and Lazarus at his bosom. 24 He cried and

said, ‘Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue! For I am in anguish in this flame.’

25 But Abraham said, ‘Son, remember that you, in your lifetime, received your good things, and Lazarus, in the same way, bad things. But now here he is comforted and you are in anguish. 26 Besides all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed, that those who want to pass from here to you are not able, and that no one may cross over from there to us.’

27 He said, ‘I ask you therefore, father, that you would send him to my father’s house. 28 For I have five brothers, that he may testify to them so they won’t also come into this place of torment.’

29 But Abraham said to him, ‘They have Moses and the prophets. Let them listen to them.’

30 He said, ‘No, father Abraham, but if one goes to them from the dead, they will repent.’

31 He said to him, ‘If they don’t listen to Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded if one rises from the dead.’”

**Now you know – don’t follow the rich man’s fate!**

John

### **Jesus and the woman from Samaria**

4:1 Therefore when the Lord knew that the Pharisees had heard that Jesus was making and baptising more disciples than John 2 (although Jesus himself didn’t baptise, but his disciples),<sup>3</sup> he left Judea and departed into Galilee. 4 He needed to pass through Samaria. 5 So he came to a city of Samaria, called Sychar, near the parcel of ground that Jacob gave to his son, Joseph. 6 Jacob’s well was there. Jesus therefore, being tired from his journey, sat down by the well. It was about noon. 7 A woman of Samaria came to draw water. Jesus said to

her, "Give me a drink." 8 For his disciples had gone away into the city to buy food.

9 The Samaritan woman therefore said to him, "How is it that you, being a Jew, ask for a drink from me, a Samaritan woman?" (For Jews have no dealings with Samaritans.)

10 Jesus answered her, "If you knew the gift of God, and who it is who says to you, 'Give me a drink,' you would have asked him, and he would have given you living water."

11 The woman said to him, "Sir, you have nothing to draw with, and the well is deep. So where do you get that living water? 12 Are you greater than our father, Jacob, who gave us the well and drank of it himself, as did his children and his livestock?"

13 Jesus answered her, "Everyone who drinks of this water will thirst again, 14 but whoever drinks of the water that I will give him will never thirst again. But the water that I will give him will become in him a well of water springing up to eternal life."

15 The woman said to him, "Sir, give me this water, so that I don't get thirsty, neither come all the way here to draw."

16 Jesus said to her, "Go, call your husband and come here."

17 The woman answered, "I have no husband."

Jesus said to her, "You said well, 'I have no husband,' 18 for you have had five husbands, and he whom you now have is not your husband. This you have said truly."

19 The woman said to him, "Sir, I perceive that you are a prophet. 20 Our fathers worshiped in this mountain, and you Jews say that in Jerusalem is the place where people ought to worship."

21 Jesus said to her, "Woman, believe me, the hour comes when neither in this mountain nor in Jerusalem will you worship the Father. 22 You worship that which you don't know. We worship that which we know, for salvation is from the Jews. 23 But the hour comes, and now is, when the true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit and truth, for the Father seeks such to be his

worshippers. 24 God is spirit, and those who worship him must worship in spirit and truth.”

25 The woman said to him, “I know that the Messiah comes, he who is called Christ. When he has come, he will declare to us all things.”

26 Jesus said to her, “I am he, the one who speaks to you.” 27 At this, his disciples came. They marvelled that he was speaking with a woman, yet no one said, “What are you looking for?” or, “Why do you speak with her?” 28 So the woman left her water pot and went away into the city and said to the people, 29 “Come, see a man who told me everything that I did. Can this be the Christ?”

30 They went out of the city and were coming to him. 31 In the meanwhile, the disciples urged him, saying, “Rabbi, eat.”

32 But he said to them, “I have food to eat that you don’t know about.”

33 The disciples therefore said to one another, “Has anyone brought him something to eat?”

34 Jesus said to them, “My food is to do the will of him who sent me and to accomplish his work. 35 Don’t you say, ‘There are yet four months until the harvest?’ Behold, I tell you, lift up your eyes and look at the fields that they are white for harvest already. 36 He who reaps receives wages and gathers fruit to eternal life, that both he who sows and he who reaps may rejoice together. 37 For in this the saying is true, ‘One sows, and another reaps.’ 38 I sent you to reap that for which you haven’t laboured. Others have laboured, and you have entered into their labour.”

39 From that city many of the Samaritans believed in him because of the word of the woman, who testified, “He told me everything that I did.” 40 So when the Samaritans came to him, they begged him to stay with them. He stayed there two days. 41 Many more believed because of his word. 42 They said to the woman, “Now we believe, not because of your speaking, but for we have heard for ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.”



## **Jesus cures a nobleman's son**

4:43 After the two days, he went out from there and went into Galilee. 44 For Jesus himself testified that a prophet has no honour in his own country. 45 So when he came into Galilee, the Galileans received him, having seen all the things that he did in Jerusalem at the feast, for they also went to the feast. 46 Jesus came therefore again to Cana of Galilee, where he made the water into wine. There was a certain nobleman whose son was sick at Capernaum. 47 When he heard that Jesus had come out of Judea into Galilee, he went to him and begged him that he would come down and heal his son, for he was at the point of death. 48 Jesus therefore said to him, "Unless you see signs and wonders, you will in no way believe."

49 The nobleman said to him, "Sir, come down before my child dies." 50 Jesus said to him, "Go your way. Your son lives." The man believed the word that Jesus spoke to him, and he went his way. 51 As he was now going down, his servants met him and reported, saying "Your child lives!" 52 So he inquired of them the hour when he began to get better. They said therefore to him, "Yesterday at one o'clock in the afternoon, the fever left him." 53 So the father knew that it was at that hour in which Jesus said to him, "Your son lives." He believed, as did his whole house. 54 This is again the second sign that Jesus did, having come out of Judea into Galilee.

Luke 8

## **Tested in the storm**

8:22 Now on one of those days, Jesus entered into a boat, himself and his disciples, and he said to them, "Let's go over to the other side of the lake." So they launched out. 23 But as they sailed, he fell asleep. A windstorm came down on the lake, and they were taking on dangerous amounts of water. 24 They came to him and awoke him, saying, "Master, master, we are dying!" He awoke and rebuked the wind and the raging of the water, and

they ceased and it was calm. 25 He said to them, “Where is your faith?” Being afraid, they marvelled, saying to one another, “Who is this, then, that he commands even the winds and the water and they obey him?”

Luke 12

### **A warning against hypocrisy**

12:1 Meanwhile, when a multitude of many thousands had gathered together, so much so that they trampled on each other, Jesus began to tell his disciples first of all, “Beware of the yeast of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. 2 But there is nothing covered up that will not be revealed, nor hidden that will not be known. 3 Therefore whatever you have said in the darkness will be heard in the light. What you have spoken in the ear in the inner rooms will be proclaimed on the housetops.

### **A call to fearless confession**

4 “I tell you, my friends, don’t be afraid of those who kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do. 5 But I will warn you whom you should fear. Fear him, who after he has killed, has power to cast into Gehenna. Yes, I tell you, fear him. 6 Aren’t five sparrows sold for two assaria coins? Not one of them is forgotten by God. 7 But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Therefore don’t be afraid. You are of more value than many sparrows.

8 I tell you, everyone who confesses me before men, him will the Son of Man also confess before the angels of God. 9 But he who denies me in the presence of men will be denied in the presence of the angels of God. 10 Everyone who speaks a word against the Son of Man will be forgiven, but those who blaspheme against the Holy Spirit will not be forgiven. 11 When they bring you before the synagogues, the rulers, and the authorities, don’t be anxious how or what you will answer or what you will say, 12 for the Holy Spirit will teach you in that same hour what you must say.”

Luke 13

## **The narrow door – the closed door: A call to timely action**

13:22 He went on his way through cities and villages, teaching and traveling on to Jerusalem. 23 One said to him, “Lord, are they few who are saved?”

He said to them, 24 “Strive to enter in by the narrow door, for many, I tell you, will seek to enter in, and will not be able. 25 When once the master of the house has risen up and has shut the door, and you begin to stand outside and to knock at the door, saying, ‘Lord, Lord, open to us!’ then he will answer and tell you, ‘I don’t know you or where you come from.’ 26 Then you will begin to say, ‘We ate and drank in your presence and you taught in our streets.’ 27 He will say, ‘I tell you, I don’t know where you come from. Depart from me, all you workers of iniquity.’ 28 There will be weeping and gnashing of teeth when you see Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and all the prophets in God’s Kingdom, and yourselves being thrown outside. 29 They will come from the east, west, north and south, and will sit down in God’s Kingdom. 30 Behold, there are some who are last who will be first, and there are some who are first who will be last.”

Luke

## **By the power of faith in God**

17:5 The apostles said to the Lord, “Increase our faith.”

6 The Lord said, “If you had faith like a grain of mustard seed, you would tell this sycamore tree, ‘Be uprooted, and be planted in the sea,’ and it would obey you.

## **Jesus and the children**

18:15 They were also bringing their babies to him, that he might touch them. But when the disciples saw it, they rebuked them. 16 Jesus summoned them, saying, “Allow the little children to come to me, and don’t hinder them, for God’s

Kingdom belongs to such as these. 17 Most certainly, I tell you, whoever doesn't receive God's Kingdom like a little child, he will in no way enter into it."

### **Jesus announces his death for the third time**

31 He took the twelve aside and said to them, "Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem, and all the things that are written through the prophets concerning the Son of Man will be completed. 32 For he will be delivered up to the Gentiles, will be mocked, treated shamefully, and spat on. 33 They will scourge and kill him. On the third day, he will rise again." 34 They understood none of these things. This saying was hidden from them, and they didn't understand the things that were said.

### **Jesus cures a blind man**

35 As Jesus came near Jericho, a certain blind man sat by the road, begging. 36 Hearing a multitude going by, the blind man asked what this meant. 37 They told him that Jesus of Nazareth was passing by. 38 He cried out, "Jesus, you son of David, have mercy on me!"

39 Those who led the way rebuked him that he should be quiet, but he cried out all the more, "You son of David, have mercy on me!"

40 Standing still, Jesus commanded him to be brought to him. When he had come near, he asked him, 41 "What do you want me to do?"

He said, "Lord, that I may see again."

42 Jesus said to him, "Receive your sight. Your faith has healed you."

43 Immediately he received his sight and followed Jesus, glorifying God. All the people, when they saw it, praised God.

### **Jesus warns against the scribes**

20:45 In the hearing of all the people, he said to his disciples, 46 "Beware of the scribes, who like to walk in long robes and love

greetings in the marketplaces, the best seats in the synagogues, and the best places at feasts. 47 They who devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayers. These will receive greater condemnation."

### **The widow's sacrifice**

21:1 Jesus looked up and saw the rich people who were putting their gifts into the treasury. 2 He saw a certain poor widow casting in two small brass coins. 3 He said, "Truly I tell you, this poor widow put in more than all of them, 4 for all these put in gifts for God from their abundance, but she, out of her poverty, put in all that she had to live on."

Luke 23

### **Jesus before Pilate**

23:1 The whole company of them rose up and brought him before Pilate. 2 They began to accuse him, saying, "We found this man perverting the nation, forbidding paying taxes to Caesar, and saying that he himself is Christ, a king."

3 Pilate asked him, "Are you the King of the Jews?"

He answered him, "So you say."

4 Pilate said to the chief priests and the multitudes, "I find no basis for a charge against this man."

5 But they insisted, saying, "He stirs up the people, teaching throughout all Judea, beginning from Galilee even to this place."

### **Jesus before Herod Antipas**

6 But when Pilate heard Galilee mentioned, he asked if the man was a Galilean. 7 When he found out that he was in Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who was also in Jerusalem during those days.

8 Now when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceedingly glad, for he had wanted to see him for a long time, because he had heard many things about him. He hoped to see some

miracle done by him. 9 He questioned him with many words, but he gave no answers. 10 The chief priests and the scribes stood, vehemently accusing him. 11 Herod with his soldiers humiliated him and mocked him. Dressing him in luxurious clothing, they sent him back to Pilate. 12 Herod and Pilate became friends with each other that very day, for before that they were enemies with each other.

### **Pilate declares Jesus innocent**

13 Pilate called together the chief priests and the rulers and the people, 14 and said to them, “You brought this man to me as one that perverts the people, and see, I have examined him before you, and found no basis for a charge against this man concerning those things of which you accuse him. 15 Neither has Herod, for I sent you to him, and see, nothing worthy of death has been done by him. 16 I will therefore chastise him and release him.” 17 Now he had to release one prisoner to them at the feast.

### **The death sentence**

18 But they all cried out together, saying, “Away with this man! Release to us Barabbas!”— 19 one who was thrown into prison for a certain revolt in the city and for murder. 20 Then Pilate spoke to them again, wanting to release Jesus, 21 but they shouted, saying, “Crucify! Crucify him!” 22 He said to them the third time, “Why? What evil has this man done? I have found no capital crime in him. I will therefore chastise him and release him.” 23 But they were urgent with loud voices, asking that he might be crucified. Their voices and the voices of the chief priests prevailed. 24 Pilate decreed that what they asked for should be done. 25 He released him who had been thrown into prison for insurrection and murder, for whom they asked, but he delivered Jesus up to their will.

Luke 23

## Jesus on the cross

33 When they came to the place that is called The Skull, they crucified him there with the criminals, one on the right and the other on the left.

34 Jesus said, "Father, forgive them, for they don't know what they are doing."

Dividing his garments among them, they cast lots. 35 The people stood watching. The rulers with them also scoffed at him, saying, "He saved others. Let him save himself, if this is the Christ of God, his chosen one!"

36 The soldiers also mocked him, coming to him and offering him vinegar, 37 and saying, "If you are the King of the Jews, save yourself!"

38 An inscription was also written over him in letters of Greek, Latin, and Hebrew: 'THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.'

39 One of the criminals who was hanged insulted him, saying, "If you are the Christ, save yourself and us!"

40 But the other answered, and rebuking him said, "Don't you even fear God, seeing you are under the same condemnation? 41 And we indeed justly, for we receive the due reward for our deeds, but this man has done nothing wrong." 42 He said to Jesus, "Lord, remember me when you come into your Kingdom."

43 Jesus said to him, "Assuredly I tell you, today you will be with me in Paradise."

## Jesus dies

44 It was now about noon, and darkness came over the whole land until three o'clock. 45 The sun was darkened, and the veil of the temple was torn in two. 46 Jesus, crying with a loud voice, said, "Father, into your hands I commit my spirit!" Having said this, he breathed his last.

47 When the centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, “Certainly this was a righteous man.” 48 All the multitudes that came together to see this, when they saw the things that were done, returned home beating their breasts. 49 All his acquaintances, and the women who followed with him from Galilee, stood at a distance, watching these things.

### **Jesus is laid in the tomb**

50 Behold, a man named Joseph, who was a member of the council, a good and righteous man 51 (he had not consented to their counsel and deed), from Arimathea, a city of the Jews, who was also waiting for God’s Kingdom. 52 This man went to Pilate and asked for Jesus’ body. 53 He took it down and wrapped it in a linen cloth and laid him in a tomb that was cut in stone, where no one had ever been laid. 54 It was the day of the Preparation, and the Sabbath was drawing near.

55 The women, who had come with him out of Galilee, followed after and saw the tomb and how his body was laid. 56 They returned and prepared spices and ointments. On the Sabbath they rested, according to the commandment.

Luke

### **The women at the empty tomb**

24:1 But on the first day of the week, at early dawn, they and some others came to the tomb, bringing the spices which they had prepared. 2 They found the stone rolled away from the tomb. 3 They entered in and didn’t find the Lord Jesus’ body. 4 While they were greatly perplexed about this, behold, two men stood by them in dazzling clothing. 5 Becoming terrified, they bowed their faces down to the earth.

They said to them, “Why do you seek the living among the dead? 6 He isn’t here, but is risen. Remember what he told you when he was still in Galilee, 7 saying that the Son of Man must



be delivered up into the hands of sinful men and be crucified, and the third day rise again?”

8 They remembered his words, 9 returned from the tomb, and told all these things to the eleven and to all the rest. 10a Now they were Mary Magdalene, Joanna, and Mary the mother of James.

### **Peter at the empty tomb**

10b The other women with them told these things to the apostles. 11 These words seemed to them to be nonsense, and they didn't believe them. 12 But Peter got up and ran to the tomb. Stooping and looking in, he saw the strips of linen lying by themselves, and he departed to his home, wondering what had happened.

### **Jesus accompanies two disciples on the way to Emmaus**

13 Behold, two of them were going that very day to a village named Emmaus, which was about seven miles from Jerusalem. 14 They talked with each other about all of these things which had happened. 15 While they talked and questioned together, Jesus himself came near and went with them. 16 But their eyes were kept from recognising him. 17 He said to them, “What are you talking about as you walk, and are sad?”

18 One of them, named Cleopas, answered him, “Are you the only stranger in Jerusalem who doesn't know the things which have happened there in these days?”

19 He said to them, “What things?”

They said to him, “The things concerning Jesus, the Nazarene, who was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people; 20 and how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him up to be condemned to death and crucified him. 21 But we were hoping that it was he who would redeem Israel. Yes, and besides all this, it is now the third day since

these things happened. 22 Also, certain women of our company amazed us, having arrived early at the tomb 23 – and when they didn't find his body, they came saying that they had also seen a vision of angels, who said that he was alive. 24 Some of us went to the tomb and found it just like the women had said, but they didn't see him."

25 He said to them, "Foolish men and slow of heart to believe in all that the prophets have spoken! 26 Didn't the Christ have to suffer these things and to enter into his glory?" 27 Beginning from Moses and from all the prophets, he explained to them in all the Scriptures the things concerning himself.

### **Jesus reveals himself to the two disciples**

28 They came near to the village, where they were going, and he acted like he would go further.

29 They urged him, saying, "Stay with us, for it is almost evening, and the day is almost over."

He went in to stay with them. 30 When he had sat down at the table with them, he took the bread and gave thanks. Breaking it, he gave it to them. 31 Their eyes were opened and they recognised him, and he vanished out of their sight. 32 They said to one another, "Weren't our hearts burning within us while he spoke to us along the way and while he opened the Scriptures to us?" 33 They rose up that very hour, returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and those who were with them, 34 saying, "The Lord is risen indeed and has appeared to Simon!" 35 They related the things that happened along the way, and how he was recognised by them in the breaking of the bread.

**Pilate's letter describes the appearance of Jesus in details!**

<https://youtu.be/qsSwKNsaSI8>

## **Jesus reveals himself to all the disciples in Jerusalem**

36 As they said these things, Jesus himself stood among them and said to them, “Peace be to you.”

37 But they were terrified and filled with fear, and supposed that they had seen a spirit.

38 He said to them, “Why are you troubled? Why do doubts arise in your hearts? 39 See my hands and my feet that it is truly me. Touch me and see, for a spirit doesn’t have flesh and bones, as you see that I have.” 40 When he had said this, he showed them his hands and his feet. 41 While they still didn’t believe for joy, and wondered, he said to them, “Do you have anything here to eat?”

42 They gave him a piece of a broiled fish and some honeycomb. 43 He took them and ate in front of them.

## **Jesus’ last words**

44 He said to them, “This is what I told you while I was still with you, that all things which are written in the law of Moses, the prophets, and the psalms concerning me must be fulfilled.”

45 Then he opened their minds that they might understand the Scriptures. 46 He said to them, “Thus it is written, and thus it was necessary for the Christ to suffer and to rise from the dead on the third day, 47 and that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name to all the nations, beginning at Jerusalem. 48 You are witnesses of these things. 49 Behold, I send out the promise of my Father on you. But wait in the city of Jerusalem until you are clothed with power from on high.”

## **Jesus is taken up into heaven**

50 He led them out as far as Bethany, and he lifted up his hands and blessed them. 51 While he blessed them, he withdrew from them and was carried up into heaven. 52 They worshipped him

and returned to Jerusalem with great joy, 53 and were continually in the temple, praising and blessing God.

## The Acts of the Apostles

FROM LUKE'S GOSPEL ON THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES (Chapter 1)

### **Luke writes what happened next**

1:1 The first book I wrote, my esteemed Theophilus, concerned all that Jesus began both to do and to teach 2 until the day in which he was received up – after he had given commandment through the Holy Spirit to the apostles, whom he had chosen. 3 To these he also showed himself alive after he suffered by many proofs, appearing to them over a period of forty days and speaking about God's Kingdom.

## Paul's Letter to the Romans

ALL HUMANITY IS GUILTY (1,18–3,20)

### **Humanity has earned God's judgment**

18 For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men who suppress the truth in unrighteousness, 19 because that which is known of God is revealed in them, for God revealed it to them. 20 For the invisible things of him since the creation of the world are clearly seen, being perceived through the things that are made, even his everlasting power and divinity – and all that they may be without excuse. 21 Because, knowing God, they didn't glorify him as God and neither gave thanks, but instead became vain in their reasoning, and their senseless heart was darkened.

22 Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, 23 and traded the glory of the incorruptible God for the likeness of an image of corruptible man, and of birds, and four-footed animals, and creeping things. 24 Therefore God also gave them up in the lusts of their hearts to uncleanness, that their bodies should be

dishonoured among themselves 25 who exchanged the truth of God for a lie and worshiped and served the creature rather than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen.

26 For this reason, God gave them up to vile passions. For their women changed the natural function into that which is against nature. 27 Likewise also the men, leaving the natural function of the woman, burned in their lust toward one another, men doing what is inappropriate with men, and receiving in themselves the due penalty of their error. 28 Even as they refused to have God in their knowledge, God gave them up to a reprobate mind to do those things which are not fitting 29 – being filled with all unrighteousness, sexual immorality, wickedness, covetousness and malice, and complete with envy, murder, strife, deceit, and evil habits. They would be among secret slanderers, 30 backbiters and those hateful to God, and would be insolent, haughty, boastful and inventors of evil things as well as disobedient to their parents, 31 without understanding, covenant breakers, without natural affection, unforgiving and unmerciful. 32 Those who, knowing the ordinance of God, practice such things are worthy of death. This is not only for those do the same, but also those who approve of those who practice them.

Paul's Letter to the Romans

### **The same standard applies to all**

2:1 Therefore you are without excuse, O man, whoever you are who judge. For in that which you judge another, you condemn yourself. For you who judge practice the same things. 2 We know that the judgment of God is according to truth against those who practice such things.

3 Do you think, O man who judges those who practice such things and does the same, that you will escape the judgment of God? 4 Or do you despise the riches of his goodness, forbearance and patience, not knowing that the goodness of God

leads you to repentance? 5 But according to your hardness and unrepentant heart you are treasuring up for yourself wrath in the day of wrath, revelation and of the righteous judgment of God. 6 God “will pay back to everyone according to their works.” 7 To those who by patience in well-doing seek for glory, honour and incorruptibility, he will give eternal life. 8 But to those who are self-seeking and don’t obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, he will give wrath and indignation, 9 oppression and anguish. This fate will fall on every soul of man who does evil – to the Jew first, and also to the Greek. 10 But glory, honour and peace go to every man who does good – to the Jew first, and also to the Greek. 11 For there is no partiality with God. 12 For as many as have sinned without law will also perish without the law. As many as have sinned under the law will be judged by the law. 13 For it isn’t the hearers of the law who are righteous before God, but the doers of the law that will be justified 14 (for when Gentiles who don’t have the law do by nature the things of the law, these, not having the law, are a law to themselves, 15 in that they show the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience testifying with them, and their thoughts among themselves accusing or else excusing them) 16 in the day when God will judge the secrets of men, according to my Good News, by Jesus Christ.

Paul’s Letter to the Romans 13

### **Live in the light of the coming days**

13:11 Do this, knowing the time, that it is already time for you to awaken out of sleep, for salvation is now nearer to us than when we first believed. 12 The night is far gone, and the day is near. Let’s therefore throw off the deeds of darkness, and let’s put on the armour of light. 13 Let us walk properly, as in the day; not in revelling and drunkenness, not in sexual promiscuity and

lustful acts, and not in strife and jealousy. 14 But put on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make no provision for the flesh and for its lusts. Paul's First Letter to the Corinthians 3

### **There is no reason to glorify mankind**

3:18 Let no one deceive himself. If anyone thinks that he is wise among you in this world, let him become a fool, that he may become wise. 19 For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. For it is written, "He has taken the wise in their craftiness." 20 And again, "The Lord knows the reasoning of the wise, that it is worthless." 21 Therefore let no one boast in men. For all things are yours, 22 whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come. All are yours, 23 and you are Christ's, and Christ is God's.

Paul's First Letter to the Corinthians 6

### **The body also belongs to God**

6:12 'All things are lawful for me', but not all things are expedient. 'All things are lawful for me', but I will not be brought under the power of anything.

13 'Foods for the belly and the belly for foods', but God will bring to nothing both it and them. But the body is not for sexual immorality, but for the Lord – and the Lord for the body. 14 Now God raised up the Lord, and will also raise us up by his power.

15 Don't you know that your bodies are members of Christ? Shall I then take the members of Christ and make them members of a prostitute? May it never be! 16 Or don't you know that he who is joined to a prostitute is one body? For, 'The two', he says, 'will become one flesh.' 17 But he who is joined to the Lord is one spirit. 18 Flee sexual immorality! 'Every sin that a man does is outside the body,' but he who commits sexual immorality sins against his own body.

19 Or don't you know that your body is a temple of the Holy Spirit which is in you, which you have from God? You are not your own, 20 for you were bought with a price. Therefore glorify God in your body and in your spirit, which are God's.

Paul's First Letter to the Corinthians

ABOUT THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD (Chapter 15)

### **Christ was risen from the dead...**

15:1 Now I declare to you, brothers, the Good News which I preached to you, which also you received, in which you also stand, 2 by which also you are saved, if you hold firmly the word which I preached to you—unless you believed in vain.

3 For I delivered to you first of all that which I also received: that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures, 4 that he was buried, that he was raised on the third day according to the Scriptures, 5 and that he appeared to Cephas, then to the twelve. 6 Then he appeared to over five hundred brothers at once, most of whom remain until now, but some have also fallen asleep. 7 Then he appeared to James, then to all the apostles, 8 and last of all, as to the child born at the wrong time, he appeared to me also.

9 For I am the least of the apostles, who is not worthy to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the assembly of God. 10 But by the grace of God I am what I am. His grace which was given to me was not futile, but I worked more than all of them. Yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me. 11 Whether then it is I or they, so we preach, and so you believed.

### **... and so we will rise again**

12 Now if Christ is preached, that he has been raised from the dead, how do some among you say that there is no resurrection of the dead? 13 But if there is no resurrection of the dead, neither has Christ been raised. 14 If Christ has not been raised, then our preaching is in vain, and your faith also is in vain. 15 Yes, we are also found false witnesses of God, because we testified about



God that he raised up Christ, whom he didn't raise up, if it is so that the dead are not raised.

16 For if the dead aren't raised, neither has Christ been raised. 17 If Christ has not been raised, your faith is vain; you are still in your sins. 18 Then they also who are fallen asleep in Christ have perished. 19 If we have only hoped in Christ in this life, we are of all men most pitiable.

20 But now Christ has been raised from the dead. He became the first fruits of those who are asleep. 21 For since death came by man, the resurrection of the dead also came by man. 22 For as in Adam all die, so also in Christ all will be made alive.

### **The end is still to come**

23 But each in his own order: Christ the first fruits, then those who are Christ's at his coming. 24 Then the end comes, when he will deliver up the Kingdom to God, even the Father; when he will have abolished all rule and all authority and power.

25 For he must reign until he has put all his enemies under his feet. 26 The last enemy that will be abolished is death. 27 For, 'He put all things in subjection under his feet.'

But when he says, 'All things are put in subjection', it is evident that he is excepted who subjected all things to him. 28 When all things have been subjected to him, then the Son will also himself be subjected to him who subjected all things to him, that God may be all in all.

**What's going on in our churches**

<https://youtu.be/mX2LySQaXM8>

### **A call to reflection**

29 Or else what will they do who are baptised for the dead? If the dead aren't raised at all, why then are they baptised for the dead?

30 Why do we also stand in jeopardy every hour? 31 I affirm, by the boasting in you which I have in Christ Jesus our Lord, I die daily. 32 If I fought with animals at Ephesus for human purposes, what does it profit me? If the dead are not raised, then 'let us eat and drink, for tomorrow we die.'

33 Don't be deceived! 'Evil companionships corrupt good morals.' 34 Wake up righteously, and don't sin, for some have no knowledge of God. I say this to your shame.

### **How should we imagine the resurrection?**

35 But someone will say, 'How are the dead raised?' and, 'With what kind of body do they come?' 36 You foolish one, that which you yourself sow is not made alive unless it dies. 37 That which you sow, you don't sow the body that will be, but a bare grain, maybe of wheat, or of some other kind. 38 But God gives it a body even as it pleased him, and to each seed a body of its own. 39 All flesh is not the same flesh, but there is one flesh of men, another flesh of animals, another of fish, and another of birds. 40 There are also celestial bodies and terrestrial bodies, but the glory of the celestial differs from that of the terrestrial. 41 There is one glory of the sun, another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars. For one star differs from another star in glory. 42 So also is the resurrection of the dead. The body is sown perishable; it is raised imperishable. 43 It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory. It is sown in weakness; it is raised in power. 44 It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body and there is also a spiritual body.

45 So also it is written, 'The first man, Adam, became a living soul.' The last Adam became a life-giving spirit. 46 However that which is spiritual isn't first, but that which is natural, then that which is spiritual. 47 The first man is of the earth, made of dust. The second man is the Lord from heaven. 48 As is the one made of dust, such are those who are also made of dust, and as

is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. 49 As we have borne the image of those made of dust, let's also bear the image of the heavenly.

## **The transformation of the living and the final victory**

50 Now I say this, brothers, that flesh and blood can't inherit God's Kingdom. Neither does the perishable inherit the imperishable. 51 Behold, I tell you a mystery. We will not all sleep, but we will all be changed, 52 in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, and the dead will be raised incorruptible, and we will be changed. 53 For this perishable body must become imperishable, and this mortal must put on immortality. 54 But when this perishable body will have become imperishable, and this mortal will have put on immortality, then what is written will happen: 'Death is swallowed up in victory. 55 'Death, where is your sting?' 'Hades, where is your victory?' 56 The sting of death is sin, and the power of sin is the law. 57 But thanks be to God, who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. 58 Therefore, my beloved brothers, be steadfast, immovable, always abounding in the Lord's work, because you know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord.

## **Paul's Second Letter to the Corinthians 5 1**

5:1 For we know that if the earthly house of our tent is dissolved, we have a building from God; a house not made with hands and that is eternal, in the heavens. 2 Meanwhile we groan, longing to be clothed instead with our heavenly dwelling, 3 because when we are clothed, we will not be found naked.

4 For indeed we who are in this tent do groan, being burdened; not that we desire to be unclothed, but that we desire to be clothed – that what is mortal may be swallowed up by life. 5 Now he who made us for this very thing is God, who also

gave to us the down payment of the Spirit. 6 Therefore we are always confident and know that while we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord, 7 for we walk by faith, not by sight. 8 We are courageous, I say, and are willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be at home with the Lord. 9 Therefore also we make it our aim, whether at home or absent, to be well pleasing to him. 10 For we must all be revealed before the judgment seat of Christ, that each one may receive the things in the body according to what he has done, whether good or bad.

## **Paul's Letter to the Galatians 6**

6:1 Brothers, even if a man is caught in some fault, you who are spiritual must restore such a one in a spirit of gentleness, looking to yourself so that you also aren't tempted. 2 Bear one another's burdens, and so fulfil the law of Christ. 3 For if a man thinks himself to be something when he is nothing, he deceives himself. 4 But let each man examine his own work, and then he will have reason to boast in himself, and not in someone else. 5 For each man will bear his own burden. 6 But let him who is taught in the word share all good things with him who teaches. 7 Don't be deceived. God is not mocked, for whatever a man sows, that he will also reap. 8 For he who sows to his own flesh will from the flesh reap corruption. But he who sows to the Spirit will from the Spirit reap eternal life.

9 Let us not be weary in doing good, for we will reap in due season if we don't give up. 10 So then, as we have opportunity, let's do what is good towards all men, and especially towards those who are of the household of the faith.

Paul's Letter to the Ephesians 4

## **The Christians' new life**

4:17 This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that you no longer walk as the rest of the Gentiles also walk, in the futility

of their mind, 18 being darkened in their understanding, alienated from the life of God, because of the ignorance that is in them, because of the hardening of their hearts; 19 who having become callous gave themselves up to lust, to work all uncleanness with greediness.

20 But you did not learn Christ that way, 21 if indeed you heard him, and were taught in him, even as truth is in Jesus. 22 That you put away, as concerning your former way of life – the old man, that grows corrupt after the lusts of deceit. 23 And that you be

renewed in the spirit of your mind, 24 and put on the new man, who in the likeness of God has been created in righteousness and the holiness of truth.

### **What exactly does this mean?**

25 Therefore putting away falsehood, speak truth each one with his neighbour. For we are members of one another.

26 ‘Be angry, and don’t sin.’ Don’t let the sun go down on your wrath, 27 and don’t give place to the devil. 28 Let him who stole steal no more, but rather let him labour, producing with his hands something that is good, that he may have something to give to him who has need. 29 Let no corrupt speech proceed out of your mouth, but only what is good for building others up as the need may be, that it may give grace to those who hear.

30 Don’t grieve the Holy Spirit of God, in whom you were sealed for the day of redemption. 31 Let all bitterness, wrath, anger, outcry and slander be put away from you with all malice. 32 And be kind to one another, tender hearted, and forgiving of each other, just as God also in Christ forgave you.

### **Paul’s Letter to the Ephesians 5**

5:1 Be therefore imitators of God, as beloved children. 2 Walk in love, even as Christ also loved you, and gave himself up for

us – an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet-smelling fragrance.

You Are My Sunshine - Family performs the MOST BEAUTIFUL  
version!

[https://youtu.be/b\\_vqS45pE4E](https://youtu.be/b_vqS45pE4E)

## Live in the light

3 But sexual immorality, and all uncleanness or covetousness, let it not even be mentioned among you, as becomes saints. 4 Nor filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not appropriate – but rather the giving of thanks.

5 Know this for sure, that no sexually immoral person, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, has any inheritance in the Kingdom of Christ and God.

6 Let no one deceive you with empty words. For because of these things, the wrath of God comes on the children of disobedience. 7 Therefore don't be partakers with them. 8 For you were once darkness, but are now light in the Lord. Walk as children of light, 9 for the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth, 10 proving what is well pleasing to the Lord. 11 Have no fellowship with the unfruitful deeds of darkness, but rather even reprove them. 12 For the things which are done by them in secret, it is a shame even to speak of. 13 But all things, when they are reproved, are revealed by the light, for everything that reveals is light. 14 Therefore he says, 'Awake, you who sleep, and arise from the dead, and Christ will shine on you.' 15 Therefore watch carefully how you walk – not as unwise, but as wise, 16 redeeming the time because the days are evil. 17 Therefore don't be foolish, but understand what the will of the Lord is. 18 Don't be drunken with wine, in which is dissipation, but be filled with the Spirit, 19 speaking to one another in psalms, hymns, and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord, 20 and giving thanks

always concerning all things in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, to God, even the Father.

Paul's Letter to the Ephesians

### **Children and parents**

6:1 Children, obey your parents in the Lord, for this is right. 2 'Honour your father and mother,' which is the first commandment, with a promise: 3 'That it may be well with you, and you may live long on the earth.'

4 You fathers, don't provoke your children to wrath, but nurture them in the discipline and instruction of the Lord.

### **God's armour**

10 Finally, be strong in the Lord, and in the strength of his might. 11 Put on the whole armour of God, that you may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. 12 For our wrestling is not against flesh and blood, but against the principalities, against the powers, against the world's rulers of the darkness of this age, and against the spiritual forces of wickedness in the heavenly places. 13 Therefore put on the whole armour of God, that you may be able to withstand in the evil day and, having done all, to stand.

14 Stand therefore, having the utility belt of truth buckled around your waist, and having put on the breastplate of righteousness, 15 and having fitted your feet with the preparation of the Good News of peace. 16 Above all, taking up the shield of faith, with which you will be able to quench all the fiery darts of the evil one. 17 And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.

18 With all prayer and requests, praying at all times in the Spirit, and being watchful to this end in all perseverance and requests for all the saints. 19 On my behalf, that utterance may be given to me in opening my mouth to make known with boldness the

mystery of the Good News, 20 for which I am an ambassador in chains – that in it I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak.

## **A life that pleases God**

4:1 Finally then, brothers, we beg and exhort you in the Lord Jesus, that as you received from us how you ought to walk and to please God, that you abound more and more. 2 For you know what instructions we gave you through the Lord Jesus. 3 For this is the will of God. Your sanctification requires that you abstain from sexual immorality. 4 And that each one of you know how to control his own body in sanctification and honour, 5 not in the passion of lust, even as the Gentiles who don't know God. 6 And that no one should take advantage of and wrong a brother or sister in this matter, because the Lord is an avenger in all these things, as also we forewarned you and testified. 7 For God called us not for uncleanness, but in sanctification. 8 Therefore he who rejects this doesn't reject man, but God, who has also given his Holy Spirit to you.

9 But concerning brotherly love, you have no need that one write to you. For you yourselves are taught by God to love one another, 10 for indeed you do it towards all the brothers who are in all Macedonia. But we exhort you, brothers, that you abound more and more, 11 and that you make it your ambition to lead a quiet life, and to do your own business, and to work with your own hands, even as we instructed you 12 – that you may walk properly towards those who are outside, and may have need of nothing.

## **What happens to those who die before Jesus returns?**

13 But we don't want you to be ignorant, brothers, concerning those who have fallen asleep, so that you don't grieve like the rest, who have no hope. 14 For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so God will bring with him those who have fallen asleep in Jesus.



15 For this we tell you by the word of the Lord, that we who are alive, who are left to the coming of the Lord, will in no way precede those who have fallen asleep. 16 For the Lord himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with God's trumpet. The dead in Christ will rise first, 17 then we who are alive, who are left, will be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. So we will be with the Lord forever. 18 Therefore comfort one another with these words.

Paul's First Letter to the Thessalonians

### **Always be ready!**

5:1 But concerning the times and the seasons, brothers, you have no need that anything be written to you. 2 For you yourselves know well that the day of the Lord comes like a thief in the night. 3 For when they are saying, 'Peace and safety,' then sudden destruction will come on them, like birth pains on a pregnant woman, and they will in no way escape.

4 But you, brothers, aren't in darkness, that the day should overtake you like a thief. 5 You are all children of light, and children of the day. We don't belong to the night, nor to darkness, 6 so then let's not sleep, as the rest do, but let's watch and be sober.

7 For those who sleep, sleep in the night; and those who are drunk are drunk in the night. 8 But let us, since we belong to the day, be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love, and, for a helmet, the hope of salvation. 9 For God didn't appoint us to wrath, but to the obtaining of salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ. 10 He died for us so that, whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with him. 11 Therefore exhort one another, and build each other up, even as you also do.

Paul's First Letter to Timothy 5

## **All will become evident at the end**

5:24 Some men's sins are evident, preceding them to judgment, and some also follow later. 25 In the same way also there are good works that are obvious, and those that are otherwise can't be hidden.

Paul's First Letter to Timothy 6

## **Greed as a motive for false teachers**

6:3 If anyone teaches a different doctrine and doesn't consent to sound words, the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godliness, 4 he is conceited, knowing nothing, but obsessed with arguments, disputes, and word battles from which come envy, strife, insulting, evil suspicions, 5 and the constant friction of people of corrupt minds and destitute of the truth, who suppose that godliness is a means of gain. Withdraw yourself from such.

6 But godliness with contentment is great gain. 7 For we brought nothing into the world, and we certainly can't carry anything out. 8 But having food and clothing, we will be content with that. 9 But those who are determined to be rich fall into a temptation and a snare and many foolish and harmful lusts, such as drown men in ruin and destruction. 10 For the love of money is a root of all kinds of evil. Some have been led astray from the faith in their greed and have pierced themselves through with many sorrows.

## **Loyalty to the inherited task**

11 But you, man of God, flee these things and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience and gentleness. 12 Fight the good fight of faith. Take hold of the eternal life to which you were called, and to which you confessed the good confession in the sight of many witnesses.

13 I command you before God, who gives life to all things, and before Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate testified the good

confession, 14 that you keep the commandment without spot, blameless, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ.

15 In its own times he will show this appearance, he who is the blessed and only Ruler, the King of kings and Lord of lords; 16 who alone has immortality, dwelling in unapproachable light; whom no man has seen, nor can see; to whom be honour and eternal power. Amen.

### **A warning to the rich**

17 Charge those who are rich in this present world that they not be haughty, nor have their hope set on the uncertainty of riches, but on the living God, who richly provides us with everything to enjoy. 18 That they do good, that they be rich in good works, that they be ready to distribute, willing to communicate, 19 laying up in store for themselves a good foundation against the time to come, that they may lay hold of eternal life.

### **The Letter to the Hebrews 6**

6:1 Therefore leaving the teaching of the first principles of Christ, let us press on to perfection – not laying again a foundation of repentance from dead works, of faith toward God, 2 of the teaching of baptisms, of laying on of hands, of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment. 3 This will we do, if God permits. 4 For concerning those who were once enlightened and tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Spirit, 5 and tasted the good word of God and the powers of the age to come, 6 and then fell away, it is impossible to renew them again to repentance. For they have crucified the Son of God for themselves again, and put him to open shame. 7 For the land which has drunk the rain that comes often on it, and produces a crop suitable for them for whose sake it is also tilled, receives blessing from God. 8 But if it bears

thorns and thistles, it is rejected and near being cursed, and will then be burnt.

### **An encouragement to persevere**

9 But, beloved, we are persuaded of better things for you, and things that accompany salvation, even though we speak like this. 10 For God is not unrighteous, so as to forget your work and the labour of love which you showed toward his name, in that you served the saints, and still do serve them. 11 We desire that each one of you may show the same diligence to the fullness of hope even to the end, 12 and that you won't be sluggish, but will instead be imitators of those who through faith and patience inherited the promises.

### **God is dependable and loyal**

13 For when God made a promise to Abraham, since he could swear by no one greater, he swore by himself, 14 saying, 'Surely in blessing I will bless you, and in multiplying I will multiply you.' 15 Thus, having patiently endured, he obtained the promise. 16 For men indeed swear by a greater one, and in every dispute of theirs the oath is final for confirmation. 17 In this way God, being determined to show more abundantly to the heirs of the promise the immutability of his counsel, interposed with an oath.

18 That by two immutable things, in which it is impossible for God to lie, we may have a strong encouragement, we who have fled for refuge to take hold of the hope set before us. 19 This hope we have as an anchor of the soul, a hope both sure and steadfast and entering into that which is within the veil. 20 This is where as a forerunner Jesus entered for us, having become a high priest forever after the order of Melchizedek.

The Letter to the Hebrews

## **Maintain your trust, even during suffering: The example of Jesus**

12:1 Therefore let us also, seeing that we are surrounded by so great a cloud of witnesses, lay aside every weight and the sin which so easily entangles us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us, 2 looking to Jesus, the author and perfecter of faith, who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising its shame, and has sat down at the right hand of the throne of God.

3 For consider him who has endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, that you don't grow weary, fainting in your souls.

The Letter from James

## **The letter's start 1**

1:1 James, a servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, writes to the twelve tribes which are in the Dispersion: Greetings.

## **Faith during trials**

2 Count it all joy, my brothers, when you fall into various temptations, 3 knowing that the testing of your faith produces endurance. 4 Let endurance have its perfect work, that you may be perfect and complete, lacking in nothing.

5 But if any of you lacks wisdom, let him ask of God, who gives to all liberally and without reproach, and it will be given to him. 6 But let him ask in faith, without any doubting, for he who doubts is like a wave of the sea, driven by the wind and tossed. 7 For let that man not think that he will receive anything from the Lord. 8 He is a double-minded man, unstable in all his ways.

## **The poor should boast!**

9 But let the brother in humble circumstances glory in his high position. 10 And in that, the rich man is made humble, because

like the flower in the grass, he will pass away. 11 For the sun arises with the scorching wind and withers the grass, and the flower in it falls, and the beauty of its appearance perishes. So also will the rich man fade away in his pursuits.

## **The source of temptations**

12 Blessed is the man who endures temptation, for when he has been approved, he will receive the crown of life, which the Lord promised to those who love him.

13 Let no man say when he is tempted, ‘I am tempted by God,’ for God can’t be tempted by evil, and he himself tempts no one. 14 But each one is tempted when he is drawn away by his own lust and enticed. 15 Then the lust, when it has conceived, bears sin. And the sin, when it is full grown, produces death.

16 Don’t be deceived, my beloved brothers. 17 Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, coming down from the Father of lights, with whom can be no variation nor turning shadow. 18 Of his own will he gave birth to us by the word of truth, that we should be a kind of first fruits of his creatures.

## **Hear and do**

19 So then, my beloved brothers, let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, and slow to anger. 20 For the anger of man doesn’t produce the righteousness of God. 21 Therefore, putting away all filthiness and overflowing of wickedness, receive with humility the implanted word, which is able to save your souls.

22 But be doers of the word, and not only hearers, deluding your own selves. 23 For if anyone is a hearer of the word and not a doer, he is like a man looking at his natural face in a mirror, 24 for he sees himself, and goes away, and immediately forgets what kind of man he was. 25 But he who looks into the perfect law of freedom, and continues – not being a hearer who forgets, but a doer of the work – this man will be blessed in what he does.

## **The standards of genuine piety**

26 If anyone among you thinks himself to be religious while he doesn't bridle his tongue, but deceives his heart, this man's religion is worthless. 27 Pure religion and undefiled before our God and Father is this: To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep oneself unstained by the world.

**James**

## **Faith has consequences**

2:14 What good is it, my brothers, if a man says he has faith, but has no works? Can faith save him? 15 And if a brother or sister is naked and in lack of daily food, 16 and one of you tells them, 'Go in peace, be warmed and filled,' and yet you didn't give them the things the body needs, what good is it? 17 Even so faith, if it has no works, is dead in itself. 18 Yes, a man may say, 'Do you have faith?' To that I say: I have works! Show me your faith without works, and I by my works will show you my faith. 19 You believe that God is one. You do well. The demons also believe, and shudder. 20 But do you want to know, vain man, that faith apart from works is dead? 21 Wasn't Abraham our father justified by works, in that he offered up Isaac his son on the altar? 22 You see that faith worked with his works, and by works faith was perfected. 23 And the Scripture was fulfilled which says, 'Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him as righteousness.' And he was called the friend of God. 24 You see then that by works, a man is justified, and not only by faith. 25 In the same way, wasn't Rahab the prostitute also justified by works, in that she received the messengers and sent them out another way? 26 For as the body apart from the spirit is dead, even so faith apart from works is dead.

**Wenn das Sterben nur nicht so schrecklich wäre Beat Abry**

<https://youtu.be/eqGBp8VVMdE>

James

## **The wisdom that comes from God**

3:13 Who is wise and understanding among you? Let him show by his good conduct that his deeds are done in the gentleness of wisdom. 14 But if you have bitter jealousy and selfish ambition in your heart, don't boast and don't lie against the truth. 15 This wisdom is not that which comes down from above, but is earthly, sensual, and demonic. 16 For where jealousy and selfish ambition are, there is confusion and every evil deed.

17 But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceful, gentle, reasonable, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy. 18 Now the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace by those who make peace.

## **On strife, its causes and its conquest**

4:1 Where do wars and fightings among you come from? Don't they come from your members' pleasures in war? 2 You lust, and don't have. You murder and covet, and can't obtain. You fight and make war. You don't have, because you don't ask. 3 You

ask, and don't receive, because you ask with wrong motives, so that you may spend it for your pleasures.

4 You adulterers and adulteresses, don't you know that friendship with the world is hostility towards God? Whoever therefore wants to be a friend of the world makes himself an enemy of God. 5 Or do you think that the Scripture says in vain, 'The Spirit who lives in us yearns jealously'? 6 But he gives more grace. Therefore it says, 'God resists the proud, but gives grace to the humble.'

7 Be subject therefore to God. But resist the devil, and he will flee from you. 8 Draw near to God, and he will draw near to you. Cleanse your hands, you sinners, and purify your hearts, you double-minded. 9 Lament, mourn, and weep. Let your laughter



be turned to mourning, and your joy to gloom. 10 Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and he will exalt you.

### **Do not judge**

11 Don't speak against one another, brothers. He who speaks against a brother and judges his brother, speaks against the law and judges the law. But if you judge the law, you are not a doer of the law, but a judge. 12 Only one is the lawgiver, who is able to save and to destroy. But who are you to judge another?

### **A warning against self-confidence and arrogance**

13 Come now, you who say, 'Today or tomorrow let's go into this city and spend a year there, trade, and make a profit.' 14 Whereas you don't know what your life will be like tomorrow. For what is your life? For you are a vapour that appears for a little time and then vanishes away. 15 For you ought to say, 'If the Lord wills, we will both live and do this or that.' 16 But now you glory in your boasting. All such boasting is evil. 17 To him therefore who knows to do good, and doesn't do it, to him it is sin.

James

### **A warning to the rich**

5:1 Come now, you rich, weep and howl for your miseries that are coming on you. 2 Your riches are corrupted and your garments are moth-eaten. 3 Your gold and your silver are corroded, and their corrosion will be for a testimony against you, and will eat your flesh like fire. You have laid up your treasure in the last days.

4 Behold, the wages of the labourers who mowed your fields, which you have kept back by fraud, cry out, and the cries of those who reaped have entered into the ears of the Lord of Armies. 5 You have lived delicately on the earth and taken your pleasure. You have nourished your hearts as in a day of

slaughter. 6 You have condemned and murdered the righteous one. He doesn't resist you.

7 Be patient therefore, brothers, until the coming of the Lord. Behold, the farmer waits for the precious fruit of the earth, being patient over it, until it receives the early and late rain. 8 You also be patient. Establish your hearts, for the coming of the Lord is at hand.

9 Don't grumble, brothers, against one another, so that you won't be judged. Behold, the judge stands at the door. 10 Take, brothers, for an example of suffering and of patience, the prophets who spoke in the name of the Lord. 11 Behold, we call them blessed who endured. You have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the Lord in the outcome, and how the Lord is full of compassion and mercy.

### **Do not swear oaths**

12 But above all things, my brothers, don't swear – not by heaven, or by the earth, or by any other oath. But let your 'yes' be 'yes', and your 'no', 'no', so that you don't fall into hypocrisy.

### **Pray in all conditions; The prayer for the sick**

13 Is any among you suffering? Let him pray. Is any cheerful? Let him sing praises. 14 Is any among you sick? Let him call for the elders of the assembly, and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord.

15 The prayer of faith will heal him who is sick, and the Lord will raise him up. If he has committed sins, he will be forgiven.

### **Mutual confession of sins and prayer for one another**

16 Confess your offenses to one another, and pray for one another, that you may be healed. The insistent prayer of a righteous person is powerfully effective. 17 Elijah was a man with a nature like ours, and he prayed earnestly that it might not

rain, and it didn't rain on the earth for three years and six months. 18 He prayed again, and the sky gave rain, and the earth produced its fruit.

Attention, don't miss it!

The letter from Flavius Josephus describes Jesus perfectly.

Flavius is considered one of the most important

historians of antiquity

<https://youtu.be/WUh0sKAHU6I>

## Concern for the erring

19 Brothers, if any among you wanders from the truth and someone turns him back, 20 let him know that he who turns a sinner from the error of his way will save a soul from death and will cover a multitude of sins.

Peter's First Letter

## Hope for a glorious future

1:3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to his great mercy became our father again to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, 4 to an incorruptible and undefiled inheritance that doesn't fade away and that reserved in Heaven for you, 5 who by the power of God are guarded through faith for a salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.

6 Wherein you greatly rejoice, though now for a little while, if need be, you have been put to grief in various trials, 7 that the proof of your faith, which is more precious than gold that perishes even though it is tested by fire, may be found to result in praise, glory, and honour at the revelation of Jesus Christ.

8 You love Jesus Christ although you have not known him, and you believe in him although you have not seen him. You rejoice greatly with joy unspeakable and full of glory, 9 receiving the result of your faith, the salvation of your souls.

10 Concerning this salvation, the prophets sought and searched diligently. These prophets, who prophesied of the grace that would come to you, 11 searched for who or what kind of time the Spirit of Christ, which was in them, pointed to, when he predicted the sufferings of Christ, and the glories that would follow them.

12 To them it was revealed that not to themselves, but to you, they ministered these things, which now have been announced to you through those who preached the Good News to you by the Holy Spirit sent out from heaven. Even the angels desire to look into these things.

### **A call to a life that pleases God**

13 Therefore prepare your minds for action, be sober, and set your hope fully on the grace that will be brought to you at the revelation of Jesus Christ. 14 Be as children of obedience, not conforming yourselves according to your former lusts as in your ignorance, 15 but just as he who called you is holy, you yourselves also be holy in all of your behaviour. 16 Because it is written, ‘You shall be holy, for I am holy.’

17 If you call on him as Father, who without respect of persons judges according to each man’s work, pass the time of your living as foreigners here in reverent fear. 18 You will know that you were redeemed not with corruptible things, with silver or gold, from the useless way of life handed down from your fathers, 19 but with precious blood, as of a lamb without blemish or spot. This is the blood of Christ, 20 who was foreknown indeed before the foundation of the world, but was revealed in this last age for your sake, 21 who through him are believers in God. God raised him from the dead and gave him glory – so that your faith and hope might be in God.

22 Seeing you have purified your souls in your obedience to the truth through the Spirit in sincere brotherly affection, love one another from the heart fervently. 23 You have been born again –

not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible – through the word of God, which lives and remains forever.

24 For, ‘All flesh is like grass, and all of man’s glory like the flower in the grass. The grass withers, and its flower falls, 25 but the Lord’s word endures forever.’ This is the word of Good News which was preached to you.

Peter’s First Letter

### **The living stone and the holy people**

2:1 Putting away therefore all wickedness, all deceit, hypocrisies, envies, and all evil speaking, 2 be as new-born babies, long for the pure milk of the Word – that with it you may grow, 3 if indeed you have tasted that the Lord is gracious.

4 Come to the Lord, a living stone, rejected indeed by men, but chosen by God, and precious. 5 You also, as living stones, are built up as a spiritual house to be a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices that are acceptable to God through Jesus Christ. 6 Because it is contained in Scripture, ‘Behold, I lay in Zion a chief cornerstone, chosen, and precious: He who believes in him will not be disappointed.’

7 For you who believe therefore is the honour, but for those who are disobedient, ‘The stone which the builders rejected has become the chief cornerstone,’ 8 and, ‘a stone of stumbling and a rock of offense.’ For they stumble at the word, being disobedient, to which also they were appointed.

9 But you are a chosen race, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a people for God’s own possession, that you may proclaim the excellence of him who called you out of darkness into his marvellous light. 10 You in time past were no people, but now are God’s people, who had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.

## EXEMPLARY BEHAVIOUR IN THE WORLD (2,11–4,11)

### **The freedom to do good works**

11 Beloved, I beg you as foreigners and pilgrims to abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul. 12 Have good behaviour among the nations, so in that of which they speak against you as evildoers, they may by your good works, which they see, glorify God in the day of visitation.

13 Therefore subject yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake: Whether to the king, as supreme, 14 or to governors, as sent by him for vengeance on evildoers and for praise to those who do well. 15 For this is the will of God, that by well-doing you should put to silence the ignorance of foolish men. 16 You should do this as freemen, and not using your freedom for a cloak of wickedness, but as bondservants of God. 17 Honour all men. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honour the king.

## Peter's First Letter

### **A new life**

4:1 Therefore, since Christ suffered for us in the flesh, arm yourselves also with the same mind. For he who has suffered in the flesh has ceased from sin.

2 You no longer should live the rest of your time in the flesh for the lusts of men, but for the will of God. 3 For we have spent enough of our past time doing the desire of the Gentiles, and having walked in lewdness, lusts, drunken binges, orgies, carousings and abominable idolatries. 4 They think it is strange that you don't run with them into the same excess of riot, blaspheming. 5 But they must give account to him who is ready to judge the living and the dead.

6 For to this end the Good News was preached even to the dead, that they might be judged indeed as men in the flesh, but live as to God in the spirit.

## TRIALS DURING SUFFERING (4,12–5,14)

### **Suffer with Christ**

12 Beloved, don't be astonished at the fiery trial which has come upon you, to test you, as though a strange thing happened to you. 13 But because you are partakers of Christ's sufferings, rejoice, so that at the revelation of his glory, you also may rejoice with exceeding joy.

14 If you are insulted for the name of Christ, you are blessed, because the Spirit of glory and of God rests on you. On their part he is blasphemed, but on your part he is glorified.

15 For let none of you suffer as a murderer, or a thief, or an evildoer, or a meddler in other men's matters. 16 But if one of you suffers for being a Christian, let him not be ashamed, but let him glorify God in this matter. 17 For the time has come for judgment to begin with the household of God. If it begins first with us, what will happen to those who don't obey the Good News of God?

18 'If it is hard for the righteous to be saved, what will happen to the ungodly and the sinner?' 19 Therefore let them also who suffer according to the will of God in doing good entrust their souls to him, as to a faithful Creator.

## Peter's Second Letter

### **Our hope in the coming of the Lord has a firm base**

1:16 We did not follow cunningly devised fables when we made known to you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but we were eyewitnesses of his majesty. 17 For he received from God the Father honour and glory when the voice came to him from the Majestic Glory, 'This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.' 18 We heard this voice come out of heaven when we were with him on the holy mountain.

19 We have the more sure word of prophecy, and you do well that you heed it, as to a lamp shining in a dark place, until the day dawns and the morning star arises in your hearts,

20 knowing this first, that no prophecy of Scripture is of private interpretation. 21 For no prophecy ever came by the will of man. But holy men of God spoke, being moved by the Holy Spirit.

Peter's Second Letter

### **False teachers and their punishment**

2:1 But false prophets also arose among the people, as false teachers will also be among you, who will secretly bring in destructive heresies, denying even the Master who bought them, bringing on themselves swift destruction.

2 Many will follow their immoral ways, and as a result, the way of the truth will be maligned. 3 In covetousness they will exploit you with deceptive words, whose sentence now from of old doesn't linger, and their destruction will not slumber.

4 For God didn't spare the angels when they sinned, but cast them down to Tartarus and committed them to pits of darkness to be reserved for judgment. 5 He didn't spare the ancient world, but preserved Noah with seven others, a preacher of righteousness, when he brought a flood on the world of the ungodly, 6 and turned the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes and condemned them to destruction, having made them an example to those who would live ungodly.

7 He also delivered righteous Lot, who was very distressed by the lustful life of the wicked 8 (for that righteous man dwelling among them was tormented in his righteous soul from day to day with seeing and hearing lawless deeds).

9 The Lord knows how to deliver the godly out of temptation and to keep the unrighteous under punishment for the Day of Judgment 10a – but chiefly those who walk after the flesh in the lust of defilement and who despise authority.

Peter's Second Letter

### **Christ will come again**

3:1 This is now, beloved, the second letter that I have written to you. And in both of them I stir up your sincere mind by



reminding you 2 that you should remember the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and the commandment of us, the apostles of the Lord and Saviour.

3 Knowing this first, that in the last days mockers will come, walking after their own lusts 4 and saying, 'Where is the promise of his coming? For from the day that the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation.'

5 For this they wilfully forget that there were heavens from of old, and an earth formed out of water and amid water by the word of God. 6 By which means the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished. 7 But the heavens that now are and the earth by the same word have been stored up for fire, being reserved against the Day of Judgment and the destruction of ungodly men.

8 But don't forget this one thing, beloved, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. 9 The Lord is not slow concerning his promise as some count slowness. But he is patient with us, not wishing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

## **A new heaven and a new earth**

10 But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night, in which the heavens will pass away with a great noise, and the elements will be dissolved with fervent heat, and the earth and the works that are in it will be burned up.

11 Therefore since all these things will be destroyed like this, what kind of people ought you to be in holy living and godliness, 12 looking for and earnestly desiring the coming of the day of God which will cause the burning heavens to be dissolved and the elements will melt with fervent heat? 13 But, according to his promise, we look for new heavens and a new earth in which righteousness dwells.

## Encouragement and warning

14 Therefore, beloved, seeing that you look for these things, be diligent to be found in peace, without defect, and blameless in his sight. 15 Regard the patience of our Lord as salvation, even as our beloved brother Paul, according to the wisdom given to him, also wrote to you. 16 As also in all of his letters, speaking in them of these things. In those, there are some things that are hard to understand – which the ignorant and unsettled twist, as they also do to the other Scriptures, to their own destruction.

17 You therefore, beloved, knowing these things beforehand, beware – lest being carried away with the error of the wicked, you fall from your own steadfastness. 18 But grow in the grace and knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To him be the glory both now and forever. Amen.

John's First Letter

LIFE IN FELLOWSHIP WITH GOD (1,1–2,17)

### The word that brings life

1:1 That which was from the beginning, that which we have heard, that which we have seen with our eyes, that which we saw and our hands touched, concerning the Word of life 2 (and the life was revealed, and we have seen and testify, and declare to you the life, the eternal life, which was with the Father, and was revealed to us) – 3 that which we have seen and heard we declare to you, so that you also may have fellowship with us. Yes, and our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son, Jesus Christ. 4 And we write these things to you that our joy may be fulfilled.

The Lie of Evolution: Prof. Dr. Werner Gitt

<https://youtu.be/uk-XbKJoi5A>

## God is life

5 This is the message which we have heard from him and announce to you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all. 6 If we say that we have fellowship with him and walk in the darkness, we lie, and don't tell the truth. 7 But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus Christ, his Son, cleanses us from all sin.

## No one is without sin

8 If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. 9 If we confess our sins, he is faithful and righteous to forgive us the sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. 10 If we say that we haven't sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.

2:1 My little children, I write these things to you so that you may not sin. If anyone sins, we have a counsellor with the Father, Jesus Christ, the righteous. 2 And he is the atoning sacrifice for our sins, and not for ours only, but also for the whole world.

## True knowledge of God; Obey his word

3 This is how we know that we know him: If we keep his commandments. 4 One who says, 'I know him,' and doesn't keep his commandments, is a liar, and the truth isn't in him. 5 But whoever keeps his word, God's love has most certainly been perfected in him. This is how we know that we are in him. 6 He who says he remains in him ought himself also to walk just like he walked.

THE HOUR OF TEMPTATION (2,18–3,24)

## The messengers of the Antichrist

18 Little children, these are the end times, and as you heard that the Antichrist is coming, even now many antichrists have arisen. By this we know that it is the final hour. 19 They went out from

us, but they didn't belong to us. For if they had belonged to us, they would have continued with us. But they left, that they might be revealed that none of them belong to us.

20 You have an anointing from the Holy One, and you all have knowledge. 21 I have not written to you because you don't know the truth, but because you know it, and because no lie is of the truth.

22 Who is the liar but he who denies that Jesus is the Christ? This is the Antichrist, he who denies the Father and the Son. 23 Whoever denies the Son, the same doesn't have the Father. He who confesses the Son has the Father also.

24 Therefore, as for you, let that remain in you which you heard from the beginning. If that which you heard from the beginning remains in you, you also will remain in the Son and in the Father. 25 This is the promise which he promised us, the eternal life.

26 These things I have written to you concerning those who would lead you astray. 27 As for you, the anointing which you received from him remains in you, and you don't need for anyone to teach you. But as his anointing teaches you concerning all things and is true and is no lie, and even as it taught you, you will remain in him.

## **A reminder to be loyal**

28 Now, little children, remain in him, that when he appears, we may have boldness and not be ashamed before him at his coming. 29 If you know that he is righteous, you know that everyone who practices righteousness has been born of him.

John's First Letter

## **Children of God and children of the devil**

3:1 See how great a love the Father has given to us, that we should be called children of God! For this cause the world doesn't know us, because it didn't know him.

2 Beloved, now we are children of God, and it is not yet revealed what we will be. But we know that when he is revealed, we will be like him. For we will see him just as he is.

3 Everyone who has this hope set on him purifies himself, even as he is pure. 4 Everyone who sins also commits lawlessness. Sin is lawlessness. 5 You know that he was revealed to take away our sins, and in him is no sin. 6 Whoever remains in him doesn't sin. Whoever sins hasn't seen him and doesn't know him.

7 Little children, let no one lead you astray. He who does righteousness is righteous, even as he is righteous. 8 He who sins is of the devil, for the devil has been sinning from the beginning. To this end the Son of God was revealed that he might destroy the works of the devil.

9 Whoever is born of God doesn't commit sin, because his seed remains in him. And he can't sin, because he is born of God. 10 In this the children of God are revealed, and the children of the devil. Whoever doesn't do righteousness is not of God, neither is he who doesn't love his brother.

John's Second Letter

### **No 'progress' above Christ!**

1:7 For many deceivers have gone out into the world; those who don't confess that Jesus Christ came in the flesh. This is the deceiver and the Antichrist.

8 Watch yourselves that we don't lose the things which we have accomplished, but that we receive a full reward. 9 Whoever transgresses and doesn't remain in the teaching of Christ doesn't have God. He who remains in the teaching, the same has both the Father and the Son.

10 If anyone comes to you and doesn't bring this teaching, don't receive him into your house and don't welcome him, 11 for he who welcomes him participates in his evil deeds.

## Wonderful Words of Life - BEAUTIFUL Hymn

<https://youtu.be/RzJWcOwqlr0>

The Letter from Jude

### Opening greeting

1:1 Jude, a servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James, writes to those who are called ‘sanctified’ by God the Father and kept for Jesus Christ: 2 Mercy to you and peace and love be multiplied.

### An admonition to faithfulness and to the following of the rules

17 But you, beloved, remember the words which have been spoken before by the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ. 18 They said to you that ‘In the last time there will be mockers, walking after their own ungodly lusts.’ 19 These are they who cause divisions, and who are sensual, not having the Spirit.

20 But you, beloved, keep building up yourselves on your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Spirit. 21 Keep yourselves in God’s love, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ to eternal life.

22 On some have compassion, making a distinction, 23 and some save, snatching them out of the fire with fear and hating even the clothing stained by the flesh.

### Final glorification

24 Now to him who is able to keep them from stumbling, and who is able to present you faultless before the presence of his glory in great joy. 25 To God our Saviour, who alone is wise, be glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and forever! Amen.

Israel is the reflection of well over 3,000 prophecies in the  
Bible

This prophecy will also come true!

So says the Lord:

Anyone who is against Israel will receive God's punishment.

Genesis 12: 2-3 / Numbers 24: 8,9

### The Sin of Lust

[https://youtu.be/lh\\_0Xf1Euc0](https://youtu.be/lh_0Xf1Euc0)



The Gethsemane Garden in Jerusalem,  
where Jesus prayed before his crucifixion





Since October 7, 2023, Israel has been at war again  
What's wrong with the Palestinians?

Palestine has never existed... as an autonomous entity. There is no language called Palestinian. There is no recognizable Palestinian culture. There has never been a land called Palestine ruled by Palestinians. Palestinians are Arabs, indistinguishable from Jordanians (who are another recent invention), Syrians, Lebanese, Iraqis, etc. Remember that the Arabs control 99.9 percent of the land in the Middle East. Israel is only one-tenth of one percent of the land mass. But that is still too much for the Arabs. They want it all. And that is what Israel is fighting for today... No matter how much concessions the Israelis make on land, it will never be enough. But all those who are against Israel forget one thing, the holy land belongs to God and therefore to Israel!!! Shalom Israel. Anyone who is against Israel will receive the punishment of God. Genesis 12:3

**Israeli-Palestinian conflict: The forgotten  
history of Palestine**

<https://youtu.be/ComNh6vXouA>



With my wife Marlis at the wedding of Nicole and Ueli



Our self-built home in Diessbach – finished in 1972, another storey added in 2000



24 years in construction



Jacqueline – Animals and nature



Three generations of Bieris – Simon, Tobias and me doing building work



Our three smallest



Marlis and Nicole by the sea in Dénia, 2012



Nicole, Lenny and Leonie





## Excursion to Brienz, Tobias and Simon 2008



You have to keep a close eye on Lenny!



Our three girls: Melanie, Juliana, Leonie



Melanie and Simon on a trip 2008



Jesus Christ died for us. He said: ‘No one comes to the father, except through me!’

You’ll be at the gates of heaven fast – in the time it takes a bolt of lightning to start in the east and strike the ground in the west.

Believe me when I say that only one thing will count when you stand before the gates to our heavenly father:  
What you carry in your heart.

Read the words that I’ve gathered here for you from the Bible again and again. They’re all words that you don’t often hear from the pulpit!

#### Paul’s Letter to the Galatians

6:7 Do not be deceived. God is not mocked, for whatever a man sows, so shall he also reap. 8 For he who sows to his own flesh will reap corruption from the flesh. But he who sows to the Spirit will reap eternal life from the Spirit.

#### John’s First Letter

True knowledge of God means obeying his word.  
2:3 This is how we know that we know God: If we keep his commandments. 4 One who says, ‘I know God,’ and doesn’t keep his commandments, is a liar, and the truth isn’t in him. 5 But whoever keeps God’s word, God’s love has most certainly been perfected in him. This is how we know that we are in him: 6 He who says he remains in him ought himself also to walk just like Jesus walked.



Melanie, apprenticeship as landscape gardener  
from August 2016





Lenny and Leonie in February 2016



Baptized Juliana on August 2, 2015



Brigitte and Melanie excursion with ship  
2008 at Brienzen



**Jesus Christ says:**

Nobody comes to the father only through me!

I tell you all, believe me:

Only one thing will count when you stand at the door of our heavenly Father, namely what you carry in your heart. No religion in the world except the gospel of Jesus Christ will lead you to the kingdom of heaven!

Every religion in this world is idolatry!

Jesus says: "I am the way, the truth and the life. Whoever has me also has the father, if you don't have me, you don't have your father!"

## Galatians 6

7 Don't kid yourself! God doesn't let mockery go with him. Everyone will reap what they have sown. 8 Whoever sows to the bottom of human selfishness will reap death from it. Whoever sows on the soil of God's Spirit will reap immortal life from him.

### 1. John

True knowledge of God: obey his word.

3 We can tell whether we really know God by listening to His commands. 4 Whoever says: "I know God" but disobeyed him is a liar and the truth does not live in him. 5 But whoever obeys God's Word, divine love has achieved its goal. And we can see from this that we have fellowship with him.

6 Whoever claims to be constantly

To have fellowship with him must live the way Jesus lived.

Alone in Israel 2018 Caesarea Philippi



# Words to my grandchildren

## Our fifth grandchild Juliana

On April 27, 2015 at 00:45 a.m. Nicole gave birth to her third child.

Juliana, you came into this world after I wrote my book.

In November 2012 I was standing on the mountain in Israel where Jesus Christ preached the Mount. I thought I would take a small stone home from here for each of our grandchildren, their four. I picked it up, then took it back to Switzerland in my suitcase. When I took it out and looked at it after about three months, I saw that there were five stones, I had counted wrong in Israel ..... but I knew immediately that we would have five grandchildren. After two and a half years afterwards you saw Juliana the light of the world.



**Juliana**, I love you with all my heart.  
Your Granddad

## Our fourth grandchild Leonie



Leonie, you've now been in the world for 20 days. I hope that I can hold you in my arms, look into your beautiful eyes and stroke your little face many more times in the future. I wish you all the best in your life. Live with God and Jesus Christ, as they're very close to you. Nothing bad will ever happen to you.

**Leonie**, I love you with all my heart.  
Your Granddad



### Our third grandchild Lenny



Lenny, you're still really small in this photo of us both asleep. There's nothing more wonderful than holding your grandchildren in your arms.

One month from now, you'll have been in this world for three years. We've had three joyful years together.

When you're older and I'm not here any more, read from my book again and again and learn from it. You'll have a big guardian angel at your side. Lenny, love God and Jesus Christ, and you'll never have anything to fear.

**Lenny**, I love you with all my heart.  
Your Granddad

## Our second grandchild Simon



Simon, you're still my little Simeli, constantly reminding me of when I was your age. In the first part of my book, I included a small section about how I used to be a little rascal back then. Remember: You're not allowed to copy me! But maybe I needed to get into trouble from time to time. It was very hard away from home, especially when I was still so young. Everything that I've written to Leonie and Lenny also applies to you, of course. I'm extremely proud of you and Melanie whenever you visit me and hug me tightly. I've kept all of the drawings and letters that you've both sent. I've also told you both a lot about God and Jesus. Simeli, learn from this book. You don't need to know anything else. If you stay on the path to God and Jesus Christ, they'll guide you until you reach them, and nothing bad will ever happen to you.

**Simeli**, I love you with all my heart.  
Your Granddad

## Our first grandchild Melanie



Melanie, you were our first grandchild. It was with you that we first experienced how wonderful it is to be grandparents. You always seem so happy when you look at Juliana, and now we have our tiny Leonie as well. You beam from cheek to cheek when you hold Leonie in your arms and stare into her beautiful little eyes. Melanie, you'll be 13 years old in two months. I'm so proud of you, because I've never met such a sweet, happy, helpful, hard-working and beautiful girl of your age. I've known for a long while that you're something special, and that you're already following the path to God and Jesus Christ. If something bad happens to you, you'll feel that God and Jesus are close to you. There's no need to be afraid, because you know that everything will work out well; I've been in many similar situations in my life. God and Jesus Christ will accompany you and protect you on your path.

**Melanie**, I love you with all my heart.  
Your Granddad



My dear grandchildren, I'll never forget your eyes or holding you in my arms and caressing you. These are the most beautiful things in the world.

I hope that we'll be able to spend many wonderful days and hours together in the future.

**Ueli specialist in winter service**  
<https://youtu.be/pVEOPJSNpoE>

Juliana, Leonie, Ueli, Lenny and Lara 2020



Simon and Juliana



Simon Original Youth Fire Department Büren  
<https://youtu.be/yTxXP128clM>

Papa Ueli with Juliana



Melanie with friend Philippe



## Juliana with Götti Tobias



Tobias Bieri, snow removal in Diessbach with John Deere, on  
December 28th, 2014

[https://youtu.be/WOspk\\_suruA](https://youtu.be/WOspk_suruA)

Simon the athlete (top Hornusser) 2017



Christmas 2017



Christmas in Diessbach at Bieri's  
[https://youtu.be/uaaF1an4\\_qM](https://youtu.be/uaaF1an4_qM)



Family photo Bieri



Jacqueline, Nicole, Tobias with dog Sheilo



Please listen carefully to these words that Jesus Christ our Lord and Savior has to say to you:

In the New Testament of the Bible it is written very tough:

"Because we know the (God) who said:

"Revenge is mine, I want to repay." - and again (it is also written):

"The Lord will judge his people too."

It is terrible to fall into the hands of the living God. "

(Hebrews 10 / 30-31)

And Jesus Christ unmistakably issues the following warning several times:

"But I tell you, my friends:

Do not be afraid of those (the people) who kill the body and (can) do nothing afterwards.

But I want to show you who you should be afraid of:

Fear the (God) who, after killing,

also has power to throw into hell.

Yes, I tell you, be afraid of that. "

(Luke 12 / 4-5) and (Matthew 10/28)

By repenting honestly (in prayer before Jesus Christ) you can have all your sins forgiven.

Use this opportunity - and then, out of gratitude for the Lord's grace, change your life so that the Lord takes pleasure in you and your behavior. Then he would also like to take you into his eternal kingdom.

It is preached from the pulpit only from heaven, but not from hell. Just like at the carnival: "We everyone is all going to heaven. "People are being misled, be it by the church, the state of science or the media.

"But clearly Jesus Christ also says that man can choose between heaven and hell, between life and death and he gets what he chooses.

The Bible is true because thousands of Bible prophecies that were written millennia ago have come true word for word to this day. What more evidence do we need that the Bible is true and that there is the living God and Jesus Christ. One very important prophecy will still come true, Jesus Christ our only salvation, King of Kings will come back and judge each one of us!

Jesus says this so clearly, not because he wants to frighten us, but because he wants to save us!

Jacqueline with Wendy





## Jesus says there is heaven and eternal damnation.

### Analysis of the possibilities

by Blaise Pascal mathematician /physicist

- You believe in God and God exists - in this case you are rewarded, you have won heaven, eternal life!
- You believe in God and God doesn't exist. In this case you don't gain anything, but you don't lose anything.
- You don't believe in God and God doesn't exist - in this case you don't gain anything, but you don't lose anything.
- You do not believe in God and God exists - in this case you will be punished, you have lost and you will receive eternal damnation.
- From this analysis of the possibilities, it is better to believe in God unconditionally.

However, if you now believe that you can confess to God in front of the whole world, and then go on living as before and love for the Lord does not come from your heart, then you have reckoned without God and Jesus Christ.

### Warning to the preachers

It is not hell that is at the center of preaching, but the gospel, the good news. The sermon, however, gets skewed when you announce the promises Jesus made but keep silent about his warnings.

What A Friend We Have In Jesus Lyric Video Lydia Walker

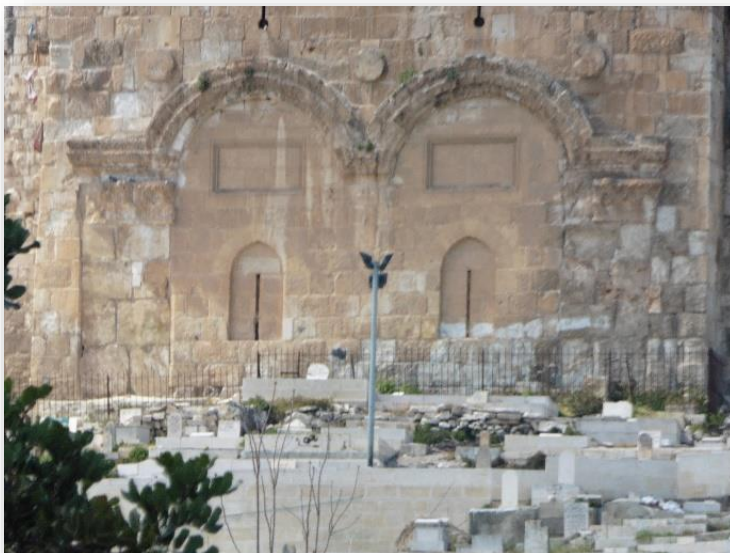
[https://youtu.be/z\\_JKK\\_YZluc](https://youtu.be/z_JKK_YZluc)

A prophecy from the Bible about the golden gate in Jerusalem:

**God said:**

This gate remains closed forever because the Lord went through here!

When God said this, many hundreds of years passed until it was closed, but today it is closed and it stays that way!



**Words from Pastor Busch**

We all lack the fear that we can go to hell, that God is really serious, that God insists on his commandments.

Busch continues: "When the zeitgeist grabs people, God's commandments are simply trampled down ..."

The preachers do not have to invent anything new because "the old is more than new". You just shouldn't leave out Jesus Christ's admonitions in the sermons.

Here are a few words from the Bible, pastors should pay attention to these:

"... they take the Lord's word for ridicule and do not want it to be true." (Jeremiah 6/10)

God's threats against sinners frighten people. So they try to ridicule it so that it doesn't sound so hard to them. Today we notice this when we speak of hell. Nobody is really afraid of it because the subject is always ridiculed and only jokes about it.

But since people do not want to accept the uncomfortable truth from the Bible, the preachers of lies "shape" and "bend" God's Word until it sounds pleasant. It is preached like this, and people like to hear it.

"... Prophets and priests all deal with lies ..." (Jeremiah 6 / 13-15 and Jeremiah 8 / 8-13)

They preach their half-truths "... to my people who love to hear lies." (Ezekiel 13/19)

And if you push God's threats far enough away from you, over time you will no longer believe that you are in danger.

Since God does not punish sins immediately (but only on the last day), people do not see the danger - and do not want to admit it.

"Because the judgment about evil do not pass immediately (is not carried out immediately), the heart of people becomes full of desire to do evil." (Ecclesiastes Solomon 8/11)

People think that they themselves are "the good guys" and the others are "the bad guys and sinners". Therefore, they cannot and do not want to imagine that Jesus Christ of all people will send them to eternal damnation. They console themselves deeply: "The others will definitely go to hell, but not me ..."

The entertainment industry also always portrays hell as something ridiculous. And you don't have to be afraid of

something that makes you laugh. Yes, Satan knows how to take away the fear of eternal damnation from people.

Why don't the churches speak openly of the fact that it will be "very uncomfortable" in hell? Because this would put off the believing sheep. The contributors don't want to hear it, so they'd run away from them. And this must be prevented in any case! This is the main task of the churches today!

But where there is no enlightenment, no conversion from the wrong way can be expected. So people run happily singing and laughing into their own ruin.

Hardly anyone understands that it is really very difficult to get into God's kingdom.

People don't want to think about death. Only thinking about what awaits us after death can make us smart so that we leave the wrong, sinful path to go on God's path.

The many preachers of lies reassure people by persuading them that Jesus Christ died for all sinners. Because that sounds good, a lot of people believe it.

God says: "... they have eyes that they can see and do not want to see, and ears that they can hear and do not want to hear ..." (Ezekiel 12/2)

Do not do the same to them, but obey the Lord. My wish would be that you become thoughtful now, and then consider whether you might go on God's way with both legs in the future.

It could be that you are already carefully walking on God's path with one leg (you often do good things and also read the Bible) while the other leg is still on the "normal" path.

But there is no "normal" way.

There is only God's narrow path that leads you into eternal life (in God's kingdom) - and there is the broad path that almost all people take (even if they consider themselves to be very

religious and believing), but it does will lead straight to eternal damnation.

Jesus Christ explains this to us by saying:

"Go in through the narrow gate. Because the gate is wide and the way is wide, which leads to damnation, and there are many (people) who go on it (the broad and simple way) (into eternal damnation). How narrow is the gate and how narrow is the path that leads to (eternal) life, and (only) few (people) find it (this narrow path to eternal life) "(and then actually follow this path) ). (Matthew 7 / 13-14)

"Because what was written before (in the Old Testament) is written for us to teach ..." (Romans 15/4)

So let the Bible teach you, because it is God's Word. Do not believe the melodious sayings of the many preachers of lies who tell you with half-truths that God loves sinners.

They are not mistakenly wrong, they deliberately lie to people because they are on the road on behalf of Satan. They want to seduce believers to passivity. That is their mission and goal. Do not be blinded by their piety. There are wolves in sheep's clothing who are merely pious.

Those who present themselves externally as believers, pious or religious - but do not try wholeheartedly to avoid sin (i.e. repeat sins and mistakes again and again without working to avoid them as far as possible) - they willfully sin .

In the New Testament of the Bible we are warned against intentionally sinning -

and it is also explained to us what the consequence of intentional (willful) sinning:

"Because if we sin willfully after receiving the knowledge of the truth, we will no longer have (in future) any other sacrifice for

sins (Jesus' sacrifice on the cross is no longer valid), but nothing but a terrible wait for the (youngest ) Judgment in which Jesus Christ will be a just - but tough judge and the greedy fire (in hell) ... "

(Hebrews 10 / 26-27)

Even those who behave cowardly, for example by denying Jesus Christ, will not get eternal life in paradise.

The Bible explains this to us:

"The figs and unbelievers (this includes the doubters) ... their part (their share, their future) will be in the pool that burns with fire and sulfur ... "(Revelation 21/8)

Family of Tobias, Brigitte, Melanie and Simon

[Brigitte at lofty heights.mp4  
https://youtu.be/2Bb\\_HxdANPU](https://youtu.be/2Bb_HxdANPU)



Fear of God is different than  
To be afraid of God.

"Happy is the person who remains in the fear of God ..."  
(Proverbs 28:14)

Lenny with Juliana



The True Story of Sodom and Gomorrah  
<https://youtu.be/7jQBICkctfM>

## Words to my children

Nicole's family: Juliana, Leonie, Lenny, Ueli with dog Lara



**Dear Nicole,**

When you were little, Mam and I prayed with you in the evening before bed. When your grosi died, I wrote you a letter. I am sure you are on the way to God and Jesus Christ. You have experienced what it means to stray from the right path.

It is strange, I saw your beautiful and dear family before my eyes many years ago.

Nicole believe me, I know more than you can imagine.

Read my book again and again and you will find the way!

Nicole, I love you very much.

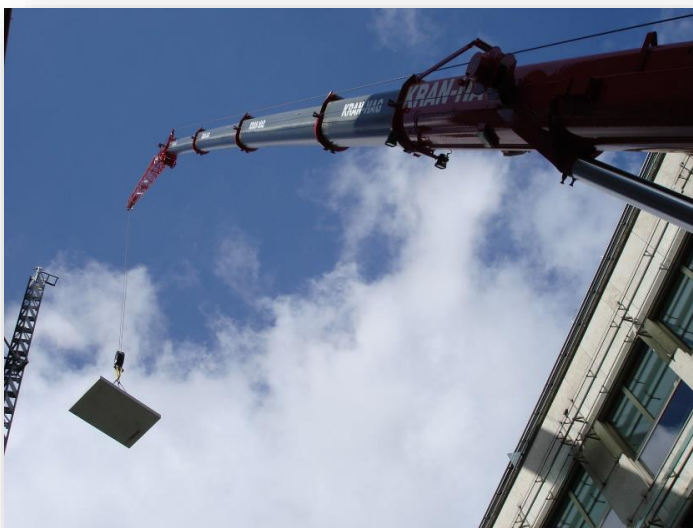
Your Pa



Tobias family: Simon, Melanie and Brigitte with his godchild  
Juliana on 2.8.2015



Tobias at work with a pneumatic crane



**Dear Tobias,**

You are our only son, but what one, we have never had the slightest difficulty with you. From an early age you were very dear to Mam and me. From an early age you helped me wherever you could, were always very helpful and whenever you had something to work with, you were next to me. You already had your own family, you had hard work during the day, and yet you were always there when I asked for help. What have we done together, double garage, an 18 meter long car and equipment shelter. In 2000 the large increase in our single-family house resulted in two additional apartments. We worked into the night, Saturdays, sometimes even Sundays and all of this alongside our professional work. I could list a lot more - Bravo Tobias!

Tobias, I am very proud of you, but you will never know how terrified I am about you.

Because you and Brigitte, I think, are still a long way off.

Melanie and Simon have found the narrow path and the small gate.

Read my book again and again and you will find Jesus Christ!

Tobias, I love you very much!

Your Pa

Tobias, Simon, Brigitte and Melanie





**Dear Jacqueline,**

You were a long way from mom and me. You are our first child. When you were born, Mam and I cried for joy. You had a happy youth, just like Nicole and Tobias. Now you are very close to us again. You learned one thing when you were at the bottom that we were there for you and that will always be the case.

Everyone who only expects something from God can rejoice - with God they will live in his new world.

Read in my book, then you will find the small gate to the great kingdom of heaven!

Jacqueline, I love you very much!  
Your Pa

## Words to my wife



### **My dear Marlis,**

I think a lot about our first evening when we first saw each other and danced together. I've never forgotten the moment I looked into your violet blueness eyes in my life. Today this year we have been married for 44 years, have experienced ups and downs, as is likely to happen to every couple and have mastered everything so far. I'm not proud of everything I've done, I'm sorry. But I am particularly proud of you, because you have always stood by me. When we had difficult things to carry or to decide, you were always by my side, even if everything didn't always come out well. I scanned all of our love letters on the PC. Mam, you remember when I was a commercial pilot in Germany. "I love you!"

Read my book again and again and think about what I wrote to our children and grandchildren, then you will make it.

Mam, I love you very much!

Your Hans



Marlis with Leonie



Jesus Christ says: "Whoever does not accept the kingdom of heaven like a child, will never get in".

## **Very important words from the Bible taken....**

Well over 3000 prophecies have come true word for word over  
the past 3000 years.

The following words will also arrive.

THE GOOD NEWS AFTER MATTHEW (Gospel of  
Matthew)

TALK ABOUT END TIME AND WORLD COURT

### **Announcement of the destruction of the temple**

241 Jesus left the temple and wanted to leave. Then his disciples came to him and pointed him to the magnificent buildings of the temple complex.

2 But Jesus said, "You admire all of this? I tell you, no stone will be left unturned here. Everything will be destroyed to the bottom. «

### **The beginning of the end**

Then Jesus went to the Mount of Olives and sat down there. Only his disciples were with him. They came up to him and asked him, "Tell us when will this happen, and how can we tell that you are coming back and the end of the world is there?"

4 Jesus said to them, "Be careful and don't be fooled by anyone!

5 Many will appear under my name and claim: 'I am the Christ who has come back!' This will mislead many.

6 Don't be alarmed when wars break out near and far! It has to happen, but that's not the end.

7 A people will fight against the other, one state will attack the other. There will be famines and earthquakes in many countries.

8 This is just the beginning of the end - the beginning of labor pains. «



## **The last time of horror**

22If God did not shorten this terrible time, no man would be saved. But he will abbreviate them for the sake of those whom he chose.

23If someone says to you: 'Look, here is Christ, the promised Savior!', Or: 'There he is!' - don't believe him.

24For many will claim to be the promised savior or a prophet. They will identify themselves through great and sensational miracles, and would even mislead those chosen by God if that were possible.

Remember that I predicted it to you!

26If people say to you, 'He is out in the desert', don't go out! Or when they say: 'He is here and hiding in a house, then don't believe them!

For the Son of Man will come visible to everyone, like a lightning bolt that flickers across the sky from east to west.

## **The judge is coming**

29 »But immediately after this terrible time the sun will darken and the moon will no longer shine, the stars will fall from the sky and the order of the sky will break down.

Then the Son of Man will appear in the sky for everyone to see. This is the sign that the end is there. The peoples of the whole world will complain and complain when they see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with divine power and glory.

31Then the trumpet will sound, and the Son of Man will send his angels in all directions so that they can bring together the people he has chosen from everywhere. «

## **The parable of the fig tree**

32 »Let the fig tree give you a lesson: If the sap shoots into the branches and the tree leaves, then you know that summer will soon be here.

So it is when you see all of this happen: Then you know that the end is imminent.

I assure you: this generation will still experience all of this.

35 Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will not pass away; they remain valid forever and ever. «

## **The end comes as a surprise**

36 »But nobody knows the day and the hour when the end is there, not even the angels in heaven - not even the son. Only the father knows them.

When the Son of Man comes, it will be like Noah's time.

Before the great flood, people ate and drank and married as they were used to - until the day Noah went into the ark.

They didn't understand what was in store for them until the tide broke in and swept them all away. It will be like this when the Son of Man comes. Two men will then work together in the field: one will be accepted, the other left behind.

41 Two women will grind grain together: one will be accepted, the other left behind. 42 Therefore be vigilant! Because you don't know which day your Lord will come. Make one thing clear to you: if a landlord knew in advance which night hour the thief would come, he would stay up and prevent the break-in.

44 Therefore always be ready; for the Son of Man will come in an hour if you don't expect it. «

THE GOOD NEWS AFTER JOHN (Gospel of John)

## **Jesus is the way to the Father**

Then Jesus said to everyone, "Don't be afraid, don't be afraid! Trust in God and trust me too!

2 There are many apartments in my father's house, and I'm going to go now to prepare a place for you. Otherwise I wouldn't have worried you with the announcement that I was leaving.

3 And when I have gone and prepared the place for you, I will come back and take you so that you are where I am.



4You know the way to the place where I go. «  
5Thomas said to him, "Lord, we don't even know where you are going! Then how should we know the way there? «  
6Jesus replied, "I am the way, because I am the truth and the life. There is no other way to the father.  
7If you know me, you will also know my father. You already know him and have seen him. «1 Cor. 15

## ON THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD (Chapter 15)

### **The transformation of the living and the final victory**

Brothers and sisters, that's for sure: flesh-and-blood people cannot get into God's new world. A transitory body cannot become immortal.

51I will now tell you a secret: We will not all die, but we will all be changed.

It happens in an instant, as quickly as someone flinches when the trumpet announces the end.

The trumpet gives the signal, then the deceased are resurrected and we who are still alive get the new body.

Our perishable body, which has fallen into death, must be transformed into an imperishable body over which death has no power.

54If that happens when the transient is cloaked with immortality and the mortal with immortality, then the prophetic word becomes true:

»Death is destroyed!

The victory is complete!

55Death, where's your victory?

Death, where's your power? ”  
according to Isa 25.8

## THE FIRST LETTER OF APOSTLE PAUL TO THE CHURCH IN THESSALONICH (1 Thessalonians)

### **What about those in the church who die before Jesus returns?**

13We do not want to leave you in the dark, dear brothers and sisters, as is the case with those in your community who have already died. Then you don't have to be sad like the rest of the people who have no hope.

14We believe that Jesus died and rose again. Just as surely, God will lead the deceased through and with him to eternal life.

15With a word from the Lord we say to you: The brothers and sisters who have died will not be at a disadvantage compared to us who are still alive when the Lord comes. 16When God's command is given, the supreme angel calls, and the heavenly trumpet sounds, Christ the Lord himself will come from heaven. First of all, everyone who died trusting in him will rise from the grave.

17After that we who are still alive will be lifted up in the air with them on clouds and led to the Lord to receive him. Then we will be with him forever.

18 So give each other courage!

### **Be ready at any time!**

We have no need to write to you about the question of when this will happen, brothers and sisters, and at what point in time it will come.

2You know very well that the day of the Lord is as unforeseen as a thief in the night. 3When people say, "Everything is calm and safe," God's devastating criminal judgment will suddenly

fall upon them, like the contractions of a pregnant woman. There is no escape.

4 You do not live in the dark, brothers and sisters, so that the day of the Lord could surprise you like a thief.

5 Rather, you are all human beings who belong to light and day.

And because we no longer belong to the night and the dark, we don't want to sleep like the others, but want to be awake and sober.

7 Whoever sleeps does it at night, and whoever gets drunk does it at night.

8 We belong to the day and therefore want to be sober. We want to put on faith and love as tanks and hope of salvation as helmets.

9 For God did not make us fall into His judgment, but that we were saved by Jesus Christ our Lord.

10 He, our Lord, died for us to live with him. This applies to all of us, whether we are still alive when he comes or whether we have died before.

11 So give each other courage and help each other, as you already do.

Juliana, Leonie and Lenny with their  
father Ueli 2020



## APOSTLE PAUL'S SECOND LETTER TO TIMOTHE (2 Timothy)

### **The time before the end of the world and the goings of the false teachers**

You need to know: We have been in dire straits in the last time before the end of the world.

People will be selfish, greedy for money, boastful and imaginary. They will blaspheme God, disobey their parents, and be in awe of nothing. They are ungrateful, loveless and unforgiving, defamatory, uncontrolled and violent, they hate the good, 4 they are unfaithful and unreliable and inflated with arrogance. They don't care about what makes God happy, they only look for what increases their own pleasure.

5You appear to be pious, but you don't want to know anything about the true teaching, about the power from which real piety lives. Stay away from these people!

## THE LETTER FROM JACOBUS

### **Believe in testing**

2My brothers and sisters, take it as a reason for joy, for the purest joy, when you are put to the test in a variety of ways.

3You know: If your faith is tested, it leads you to steadfastness;

4But steadfastness should lead to doing what is right and good, so that you are impeccable in every respect and nothing is missing to perfection.

5If there are any of you who do not know what to do in a particular case, ask God for wisdom and God will give it to you.

Because he likes to give them to everyone without blaming them.

6You must ask God with firm trust and you must not doubt. Anyone who doubts is like the ocean waves that are whipped by the wind and driven back and forth.

7Such people cannot expect to receive anything from the Lord; 8because they are divided and inconsistent in everything they do.

### **Where the temptations come from**

12Who can be happy who is put to the test and passes it; for God will give him the wreath of victory, the eternal life that he has promised to all who love him.

13If a person is tempted, he should not say: "God has tempted me." Just as God cannot be tempted to do evil, so he does not tempt anyone to do so.

14 It is one's own desire that lures and captures people.

15If someone gives in to her, desire becomes pregnant and gives birth to sin. And when sin is mature, it produces death.

16My dear brothers and sisters, do not be misled!

17Loud good gifts, only perfect gifts come from above, from the creator of the stars. With him there is no increase and decrease in light and no darkening.

18From his free will he gave us a new life through the word of truth, through the good news. So we are, as it were, the firstborn of his new creation. 19Hear and do Remember, dear brothers and

sisters, that everyone should always be ready to listen, but take their time before they speak and more before they get angry.

20 For anger, nobody does what is right before God.

21 So put aside all that is bad and bad and willingly accept the word that God has planted in your heart. It has the power to save you.

22 It is not enough to just listen to this word. You have to put it into practice, otherwise you will cheat yourself!

23 Whoever hears the message of God but does not act on it is like a person who looks in the mirror:

24 He sees himself as he is and takes a quick look. But then he goes away - and he has already forgotten what he looked like.

25 On the other hand, man who looks deeply and continuously into the perfect law of God that frees us. He not only listens to forget it again, but acts accordingly. You can be happy who really does it.

### **Don't swear**

Most of all, my brothers and sisters, stop swearing if you want to argue anything. Do not swear by heaven, earth or anything. Your yes must be a yes and your no a no. Otherwise you will fall into the judgment of God.

### **APOSTLE PETER'S SECOND LETTER (2 Peter)**

### **Christ will come again**

31 Beloved Ones, this is the second letter I am writing to you. With both of them, I am recalling what you have known for a

long time, but I want to keep you awake and strengthen your unspoiled disposition.

2Remember what the holy prophets have predicted, as well as the binding instructions of our Lord and Savior given to you by the apostles!

3You have to be clear about it above all: Recently people will appear who only follow their own selfish desires. They will make fun of you

4and say: "He promised to come back! Where is he The generation of our fathers has now died; but everything is as it has been since the creation of the world! «

5You don't want to admit that there was a heaven and an earth before. God had them through his word created. The earth had risen from the water and was resting on the water.

6The word and the water also destroyed it during the great flood.

7It is the same with the present heaven and the present earth: They have been determined for the fire by the same Word of God. When the day of judgment comes, they will perish and with them all who have disobeyed God.

8 My dear ones, one thing you should not overlook: The time is different for the Lord than for us humans. For him, a day is like a thousand years, and a thousand years like a single day.

9The Lord does not hesitate to fulfill his promises, as some think. On the contrary, he is patient with you because he does not want some to perish. He wants everyone to have an opportunity to reverse their wrong path.

## **A new heaven and a new earth**

10But the day of the Lord comes unpredictably like a thief. Then the sky will pass under roaring noise, the heavenly bodies burn up in the fire, and the earth and everything that is on it will melt.

11When you consider that everything will go this way, what an incentive it must be for you to live a holy life that pleases God!

12Live in anticipation of the great day that God will bring up! Do yours that he will come soon can. The sky will then go up in flames and the heavenly bodies will melt.

13But God has promised us a new heaven and earth. There will be no more injustice there because God's will rules. We are waiting for this new world.

## **Encouragement and warning.**

14 Dear Ones, because you are waiting for it, do everything you can to ensure that your fellowship with the Lord is not affected by anything. Try to stand in front of him cleanly and flawlessly when he comes.

15 Understand: Our Lord hesitates only out of patience so that you may be saved!

17 You, dear ones, now know all this in advance. Be careful and don't be misled by those who despise any order. Otherwise you will lose your firm footing and fall.

18 Live more and more from the grace of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ and learn to recognize him ever more deeply. Honor belongs to him, now and forever! Amen.



## **The fifth book of Moses**

18: 10-12

10 None of you can burn your son or daughter on the altar as a victim. You must not tolerate fortune tellers among you, no one who predicts the future from any signs or practices,

11 also nobody who uses magic formulas and uses it to summon spirits or question dead people.

12 Anyone who does this is repugnant to the Lord. It is precisely because of these things that the Lord drives out the people of the land from you.

13 The LORD is your God; you should belong to him completely and undivided.

(Ecclesiastes 9.5)

The living know that they will die; but the dead know nothing .

## **Final praise**

24 God has the power to save you from failure and to take you to where you will see His glory flawlessly and joyfully.

25Him, the only God who saves us through Jesus Christ our Lord, glory, sovereignty, power and sovereignty belong to us from eternity, now and forever! Amen.

Matthew 5

1 When Jesus saw the crowd, he climbed a mountain and sat down. His disciples came to him.

2a Then he began to speak and taught her what God now asked of his people.

Who can look forward to ... (The Beatitudes)

**He said:**

3 »Everyone can be happy  
who only expect something from God -  
with God they will live in his new world.

4 Everyone can be happy  
who suffer from this hopeless world -  
God will put an end to their suffering.

5 Everyone can be happy  
who are oppressed and renounce violence -  
God will give them the earth to own.

6 Everyone can be happy  
who are hungry and thirsty for it,  
that God's just will prevails on earth  
God will satisfy your hunger.

7 Everyone can be happy  
who are merciful -  
God will be merciful to them too.

8 Everyone can be happy  
that are pure in the heart -  
they will see God.

9 Everyone can be happy  
that make peace -  
God will accept her as his sons and daughters.

10 Everyone can be happy  
who are persecuted because they do what God wants -  
with God they will live in his new world.

11 You may rejoice when they insult and persecute and slander you because you belong to me.

12 Rejoice and rejoice, because rich wages await you in God. That's how they treated the prophets before you. «

Lenny, Leonie and Juliana 2017



## Words from Pastor Busch

**We all lack the fear that we can go to hell**, that God is really serious, that God insists on his commandments.

Busch continues: "When the zeitgeist grabs people, God's commandments are simply trampled down ..."

The words below again, because they are very important to you:

## So that you know when the end is near.

Check everything that happens, your fellow human beings, the media, the pastor, what is taught about evolution, from elementary school to university, you will know when the end is near.

THE SECOND LETTER OF APOSTLE PAUL TO TIMOTHEUS (2. TIMOTHEUSBRIEF)

**The time before the end of the world and the goings of the false teachers**

31 You have to know: In the last time before the end of the world we are facing bad conditions.

2 People will be selfish, greedy for money, boastful and imaginary. They will blaspheme God, disobey their parents, and be in awe of nothing. You are ungrateful

3 loveless and unforgiving, defamatory, uncontrolled and violent, they hate the good,

4 are unfaithful and unreliable and inflated with arrogance. They don't care about what makes God happy, they only look for what increases their own pleasure.

5 They give the appearance of piety, but of true doctrine, of strength, of true piety ives, they don't want to know anything. Stay away from these people!



## 18 Nobody should fool themselves!

If there are any of you who consider yourself wise by the standards of this world, you must first become foolish by these standards to be really wise.

19 What people think is profound is nonsense in God's eyes. The scriptures say: "God catches the wise in the net of their own cunning."

20 And it also says: "The Lord knows the thoughts of the wise and knows how senseless they are."

God lets you through  
Jesus Christ say:  
There is no savior except me!

Melanie 2017



## Nicole's family 2020



Lenny, Leonie, Juliana 2020  
Gsteiger on the BMX racetrack z'Gränche  
<https://youtu.be/kuYAsjJl1g>



For all!

That should make you think!

### **Do you doubt God**

Then you are also one of those people who doubt the God of the Bible and do not believe in God. If so, you belong to an ever growing group of people in the world. Now you can think that if so many people no longer believe in an almighty God, then you can't be wrong. They lie back calmly and continue to live their lives knowing that there is no God.

Where do so many people get their information from so that they can make a conscientious decision that there is no God? Do you actually know that you are being unwittingly seduced. Already in school they say there is no god. The same is said and confirmed at the university every day in the media. Every day, thousands of people take this opinion unchecked.

Be honest, have you ever dealt with the truth of this opinion?

About 200 years ago there was hardly a person in Europe who did not believe in God. However, if someone says today that he believes in the omnipotent God of the Bible, in most cases he will only be laughed at and if it gets really fat, he will also be portrayed as mentally disturbed. You know that this was predicted more than 2000 years ago.

*Because there will come a time when they will not endure the wholesome teaching; but according to their own desires, they will charge themselves teachers who make their ears itch, and will turn their ears away from the truth and turn to the fables.  
(The Bible 2 Timothy 4: 3*

The cited passage makes it clear that there will come a time in human history when people will set up all sorts of teachings,

theories and opinions about people and life. Most people will no longer believe in God and his teachings in the Bible. If you don't believe in God, unfortunately I have to tell you that you are fulfilling this prediction. As predicted, you are misinformed about God. You are told all sorts of things, only you can no longer hear the truth about God and his son Jesus Christ.

You are told that there is no God. God is a product of human ingenuity. Thus God is not the creator of our earth, and our earth with people, animals and plants is the result of chance and evolution.

## Wrong theory of evolution

Do you also believe in the theory of evolution? Whoever you ask, hardly anyone doubts the theory of evolution, which describes the development of life from origin to the present day. If you take a look at people, they usually cannot say much about this theory. One has not dealt so intensively with the theory of evolution. After all, most people are not biologists. Nevertheless, it would be generally known and recognized that the theory of evolution has been proven, the tenor.

### **But is the theory of evolution really scientifically proven?**

Unfortunately, I have to tell you that people today are largely misinformed. **The theory of evolution is one of those false teachings, as described in the above passage. The theory of evolution has not been scientifically proven.** But nobody tells you that today, since the only alternative is an almighty God of creation, and why you don't want that to be true.

*The Australian biologist Michael Denton, a former evolutionist and author of the book *Evolution: A Theory in Crisis*, says the following: "Science has so thoroughly invalidated Darwinian evolution that it should be rejected"*

*The mathematics professor Wolfgang Schmidt says: "Evolution is a metaphysical myth without any scientific consent." After*



*more than 60 years, this truth was also recognized by the former atheist author and philosopher Malcolm Muggeridge, who says: "I am convinced that the theory of evolution, especially the extent to which it is used, will go down in the history books of the future as one of the greatest jokes. Posterity will be amazed, like such a weak and dubious hypothesis so incredibly carelessly accepted. "*

*The Scottish anatomist and anthropologist Dr. Arthur B. Keith says the following: "The theory of evolution is unproven and unprovable. We believe in it because the only alternative to this is the act of God's creation, and that is unthinkable."*

*British astronomer and mathematician Sir Fred Hoyle confirms: "The scientific world has been led to believe that evolution has been proven. Nothing could be further from the truth"*

Many scientists confirm that the theory of evolution cannot be proven. I am convinced that only a spiritual, planning, creative and almighty being like God can be considered for the creation of our earth with everything we find on it. We give you the advice, if you believe in the theory of evolution, to check this belief thoroughly again.

## **Wrong theological teachings**

When it comes to the question of whether God exists or not, one should be able to expect that theologians and pastors in the churches can give a clear answer. Did you know that only a small proportion of these people believe in Almighty God as it is presented in the Bible?

## **How could this happen?**

In the time of the Enlightenment, in which the theory of evolution also originated, reason also moved into theological research. If God was still understood as the input of all biblical

texts, then God was excluded in the sense of natural reason in the scientific interpretation of the Bible. Scientific rational reason took the place of faith. Yes, you've read that correctly. You study the Bible's Word of God and just exclude the main inputer of God.

The Bible was gradually dismantled by modern theologians. For example, according to today's historically critical biblical interpretation, Jesus' words and deeds were just legends that a few uneducated fishermen came up with. Miracles never happened, Jesus wasn't God's son, there was no resurrection, and so on. The basic tenor is: Everything in the Bible didn't happen that way. Since miracles and other superphysical phenomena cannot be explained by physical means, they have not taken place accordingly.

In place of God's plan of salvation and eternal redemption in Jesus Christ, human goals of world improvement have taken over. It is no wonder that most churches today only preach on political issues such as the environment, peace and justice. But what God has to say to us humans for the very personal life situations, one does not know much more about it. Unofficially, God doesn't exist anymore.

The fact that there are people who have had very personal experiences with God and his son Jesus Christ is ignored. And everyone who believes the Bible to be true is defamed and sometimes portrayed as mentally disturbed.

## **The truth**

If you continue to believe the wrong teachings and not God, you will have a huge problem at some point. After all, you will have to appear before God after your earthly life to account for every sin you have committed in your life. God will then say to you: "I don't know you because you didn't believe in me and my son Jesus Christ." The result will mean hell to you. Unfortunately,

this is the truth that is withheld from you on all sides every day, as was already predicted in the above passage.

The last lines were very tough words and should not pose a threat to you from my side. I just want to give you a serious warning about what to expect if you continue to believe the lies of evolutionists and modern historically critical theologians.

Why, if everyone has not believed in God during their lifetime, must every person appear before God after their life in order to be accountable?

Our farthest ancestors, the first two people Adam and Eve had sinned against God. They opposed direct instructions from God. They should not eat from a particular tree in the Garden of Eden in which they lived. They did so anyway, becoming lost mortal sinners. (The Bible Genesis 3)

Since the first two people rebelled against God, we humans have lived separately from God. It is the sins in our life in the form of all kinds of evil thoughts and deeds that lead to this separation. Look at our world. We humans do the worst things every day. We lie, cheat, envy, kill each other and commit a lot more in both large and small.

God our Creator, who sees all our thoughts and actions, does not like that. He will judge all of those evil things we have done in our lives because he is our Creator and wants to establish justice. That is why every person has to give an account of his life before God.

**The way out** God is not just a God who will judge. He is also a god of love and grace. God has created a way out of this whole dilemma in which we humans are.

Because God gave his own son Jesus Christ to us humans in death. Anyone who believes in this Son of God, Jesus Christ and confesses his offenses and sins before him can escape the impending judgment of God. At Christmas we Christians

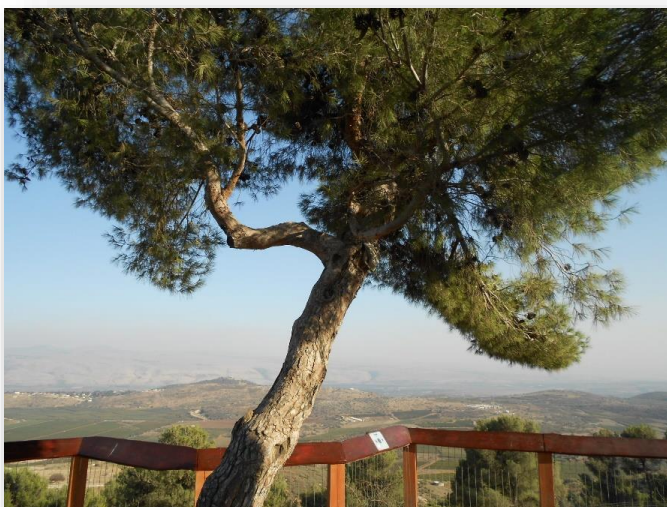
celebrate that the Savior Jesus Christ was born. The Son of God came into our world to ultimately die for us sinners lost. He was to blame on the cross for the people who believe in him.

So anyone who steps seriously before God and asks for the forgiveness of all his sins will be spoken fairly. From this point on, God will treat such people as if they had never done anything bad or unjust in their lives. After their life, they no longer have to appear before God to be accountable, because Jesus Christ has already paid all the debt on the cross and has taken the punishment he deserves. The result will be heaven for such people, after their earthly life, where they will lead an absolutely perfect life in a new, unimaginably dreamy world.

Oh es ist wunderbar dass Jesus mich liebt!

<https://youtu.be/MZ2WjSAJ3qU>

In Israel 2012



Nicole and Ueli 2020  
Marbot family with pastured chickens  
<https://youtu.be/yk96yM5bkHo>



Juliana, Lenny, Leonie 2020



Hike to Chnebelsburg on November 9th, 2021  
[https://youtu.be/ua\\_nM5gPKdE](https://youtu.be/ua_nM5gPKdE)

## My firm belief

*I have experienced everything in my life and experience it every day as it is here in Psalm 91.*

Why are there more and more people who don't believe in God and Jesus Christ.

I am not surprised, because this is also prophesied in the Bible: "When the end is near, more and more will fall away from faith."

But Jesus Christ will come back and judge each one of us, that is what the Bible says.

**Everyone can be sure, we will all have a Just Judge.**

Psalm 91

## Under God's Protection

1 Whoever lives under the protection of the highest God may rest with him who has all power.

2 He says to the LORD: "You are my refuge, I am safe with you as in a castle. My God, I trust you! «

3 You can rely on it: The LORD will save you from the traps set for you, from betrayal and slander.

4 He spreads his wings over you, you are safe very close to him. His loyalty covers you like a shield and protective wall.

5 You no longer have to be afraid of dangers and horrors at night, not even of daytime raids

6 Before the plague that strikes in the dark or the fever that rages at noon.

7 Even if a thousand die next to you and ten thousand fall around you - it will not affect you.

8 You will see with your own eyes how God punishes all who disregard him.

9 You say, "The LORD is my refuge." You have found protection from the highest God.

10 Therefore no evil will happen to you, no harm may threaten your house.

11 God has commanded his angels to protect you wherever you go.

12 They will carry you on hands so that you don't trip over stones.

13 Lions and snakes cannot harm you, you will trample them all down.

14 God himself says: »He hangs on me with all my love, so I will keep him. Because he knows and honors me, I will take him to safety.

15 When he calls me, I answer. When he is in need, I am with him; I take it out and honor it.

16 I give him a long, full life; he'll get the help he's waiting for.

**I believe in God and Jesus Christ with all my heart**

**Don't miss this video; what happened 2200 years ago?**

<https://youtu.be/fUAAWBXe9vE>

Lenny and Leonie 2017

**Lenny the drummer**

[https://youtu.be/S-ztp67T8\\_k](https://youtu.be/S-ztp67T8_k)



Nicole 2016





Melanie and Philippe 2017



Brigitte and Melanie 2017



Leonie shortly before kindergarten



Lenny at 14 years old 2024



## Melanie's Confirmation 2016



## Simon's Confirmation 2018



# **The love letter from God - to you!**

**My dear child,**

I know you very well, even if you may not know me yet.  
(Psalm 139: 1)

I know when to get up and when to go to sleep. I know all of  
your ways. (Psalm 139: 3)

I made you in my own image. (Genesis 1:27)

You are my child (Acts 17:28)

You weren't an accident. I wrote in my book every single day  
of your life. (Psalm 139: 15-16)

I have determined the time and place of your birth and thought  
about where you will live. (Acts 17:28)

I have plans for you that are full of future and hope. (Jeremiah  
29:11)

My good thoughts about you are as numerous as the sand on  
the seashore. (Psalm 139: 17-18)

I'm so happy about you that I can only cheer. (Zephania 3:17)

When your heart is broken I am close to you. (Psalm 34:18)

As a shepherd carries a lamb, so I carry you in my heart.  
(Isaiah 40:11)

One day I'll wipe every tear from your eyes And I'll take away  
all the pain of your life (Revelation 21: 3-4)

I gave up everything for you because I want to win your love.  
(Romans 8: 31-32)

I ask you now: Do you want to be my child? (John 1: 12-13)  
I'm waiting for you. (Luke 15: 11-32)

**In love,**

**Your Father - Almighty God**



Leonie, Lenny, Juliana 2020





Melanie with friend Philippe



Melanie in agriculture apprenticeship 2020

Melanie's autumn cut October 14, 2023

<https://youtu.be/hu-zSX60yJo>



Graduated from EFZ as a landscape gardener from 2016 to 2019

Graduated from EFZ 2019 to 2021 as a farmer

Juliana, Lenny, Leonie 2020



Juliana und Leonie 2022  
<https://youtu.be/uOspS1pipPA>





## **What does God have to do with the Titanic?**

The subject of "sinking the Titanic" is still a hot topic: The question "Why the Titanic sank?", Which still concerns many people, can only be explained superficially by the collision with an iceberg. But what are the actual "backgrounds"? Unfortunately, too little precise information is provided.

### **An unknown researched this:**

In my research on Titanic, I came across the following:

Among the hundreds of shipyard workers who were involved in the construction of the ship, some, in spite of their Catholic workmates, had written curses and blasphemies on the ship's walls: "Not even Christ can sink it." Above the diving line one read in giant letters: "Neither God nor the Pope", and on the other side: "Neither the earth nor the sky can devour you".

Although these labels were painted over with varnish, most of them reappeared.

A Titanic employee who had seen the labels in person wrote a letter to his relatives in Dublin, which they later kept like a relic. It says: "I am convinced that the ship will not arrive in America because of the blasphemy that covers its walls."

One of the blasphemers was Captain Smith, the ship's captain. He repeated his blasphemies during lunch on the drive. It was the last lunch of his life.



Because then followed the night of April 14th to 15th. Some of the passengers had gone to rest, others were enjoying themselves with dance music. Then the accident came: at 11:40 p.m. the Titanic rammed an iceberg 300 nautical miles south of Newfoundland.

The gigantic natural masses scratched the flank of the ship over a length of 100 m within 10 seconds, as if the Titanic were made of cardboard. The words "Neither God nor the Pope" were literally cut in two by the iceberg.

At 2:20 a.m., the ocean liner, the pride of the British merchant navy, sank. Over 1500 people drowned, 705 were able to save themselves. The ship sank 3,200 meters.

It was the most expensive coffin the world has ever seen - a mute and yet so vocal testimony to human skill and helpless powerlessness at the same time ...

## God does not allow him to be mocked!

I know that there are many people who are not Christian or who do not have faith in God. And that's why many will say: "Such a humbug, God does not exist, it's all just coincidence", others will tend to agree with the above text and still others don't really know what to think.

And that's exactly why I have included this text here. Because it stimulates thought and discussion.

It can't be a coincidence, because for me there are just too many coincidences.

- The delay in the construction of the Titanic and the associated subsequent maiden voyage

- The Titanic did not receive a ship christening (it was not considered necessary)
- That the very side collided with the iceberg on which the blasphemy was written
- That this accident happened at all

This list could go on, but I think that's enough to explain my point of view.

Another point that supports the above thesis is the Third Commandment of the 10 Commandments:

**"You shall not use the name of the Lord your God in vain;  
for the Lord will not leave him unpunished who misuses  
his name."**

For me all of this is very fascinating and further proof that God must exist!

An unknown author

### Sinking of the Titanic



Nicole with family 2020  
The film from the farm in Gsteig  
<https://youtu.be/QhErFG3gTL8>



Juliana with grandfather 2021



## THE FIRST LETTER OF THE APOSTLE PAUL TO THE CHURCH IN CORINTH (1ST CORINTHIANS)

131 When I speak the languages of all men and even the  
language of angels,  
but I have no love - then I'm just a booming gong or a noisy  
drum.

2 When I have prophetic inspiration  
and know all heavenly secrets and have all knowledge when I  
have such strong faith that I can move mountains, but I have no  
love - then I am nothing.

3 And if I distribute all my possessions  
and take death in the flames  
but I have no love - then it is no use to me.  
4 Love is patient and kind.

Love is not jealous for its own point of view,  
she doesn't brag or pretend.

5 Love takes no liberties  
she does not seek her own advantage.  
She does not allow herself to be provoked to anger and does  
not hold up against evil.

6 She is not gleeful  
when others are wronged  
but rejoices with  
when someone does what is right.

7 love never gives up on anyone

trusts in every situation and hopes for others;  
she endures everything with great patience.

8 Love will never die.  
Prophetic inspirations stop once  
speaking in tongues of the spirit falls silent,  
knowledge will also come to an end.

9 For our knowledge is piecemeal,  
and our prophetic speaking is piecemeal.

10 When the whole truth is revealed  
it is over with the patchwork.

11 Once upon a time when I was a child  
I talked like a child  
I felt and thought like a child.  
But when I grew up  
I've put aside the childish ideas.  
12 Now we only see an unclear picture

like in a cloudy mirror;  
but then we see God face to face.  
Now we only know God imperfectly;  
but then we will know God completely,  
as he already knows us.

13 Even if it all stops once -  
Do not believe, hope or love.  
These three will always remain;  
but the highest is love.

**The Church in the Wildwood BEAUTIFUL Hymn!**

<https://youtu.be/PjsapRVcA3s>

Juliana, Nicole, Leonie 2020



Simon 2020, as a tractor driver





Simon 2020 in the 3rd year of training, on the road as Road  
transport specialist EFZ

<https://youtu.be/75x51Fs9c9M>



Juliana 2020, on a walk





# The 10 Commandments

**First commandment:** You shouldn't have any other gods next to me

**Second commandment:** You shall not make yourself an image or any simile

**Third Commandment:** Do not abuse the name of the Lord your God

**Fourth commandment:** remember and sanctify the day of rest

**Fifth Commandment:** Honor your father and mother

**Sixth Commandment:** You shall not kill

**Seventh Commandment:** You shall not commit adultery

**Eighth commandment:** You shall not steal

**Ninth Commandment:** You shall not bear false testimony against your neighbor

**Tenth commandment:** You shall not desire

How can we live these commandments in our time?

There is nothing more beautiful than in the morning when you wake up until the evening before you go to sleep, walking hand in hand with our God and Savior Jesus Christ on the narrow path to the small gate into the kingdom of heaven!

**The 10 Commandments Explained Like You've Never Seen It Before**

[https://youtu.be/a6\\_t8teJzKg](https://youtu.be/a6_t8teJzKg)

Nicole with family 2020



Juliana 2019, the most beautiful girl in the world



Lenny and Leonie on a picnic in 2020



Melanie and Philippe 2022



Jesus Christ, in His divine power, has given us  
Everything we need to live as he pleases.  
2 Peter 1:3a



Simon and Lorena 2022

Simon Bieri Holztransporte  
<https://youtu.be/QzHreQARCQs>



And the world with its lusts perishes;  
but whoever acts as God wants,  
will live forever  
1.Johannes 2,17

~ 304 ~

## Something else for the really smart ones

This is also in the Bible:

What good is it to you if you gain the whole world but lose eternal life?

### Nobody should fool themselves!

If there are any of you who consider themselves wise by the standards of this world, they must first become foolish by those standards in order to be truly wise. What people think is profound is nonsense in the eyes of God. The Scriptures say, “God catches the wise in the net of their own cunning.”

And it also says: “The Lord knows the thoughts of the wise and knows how senseless they are.”

1Corinthians 3:18-20

Melanie with Philippe 2022



This is also in the Bible, something of the most important things.

Romans 10:9-13

9If you confess with your mouth, “Jesus is Lord,” and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved.

10He who believes with his heart will be recognized by God as righteous; and whoever confesses with his mouth will be saved in the last judgment.

11It is written in the Holy Scriptures: “Whoever believes in him and trusts in him will not perish.”

12This applies equally to Jews and Gentiles. They all have one and the same Lord: Jesus Christ. From his wealth he gives eternal life to all who acknowledge him as their Lord.

13It is also said, “Everyone who confesses the Lord and calls on his name will be saved.”



And Jesus came and spoke to them, saying, All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me.

Juliana 2024



My grandchildren Juliana and Leonie, ages 9 and 11, will sing  
Psalm 13:6 on June 15, 2024. Oh let us sing!

<https://youtu.be/01AJhnkd2A>

Leonie 2020





## JESUS SHOWS HIMSELF TO HIS DISCIPLES

(Mark 16:14-18; Luke 24:36-49)

16The eleven disciples went to Galilee to the mountain where Jesus had sent them.

17When they saw him, they worshiped him, but some also had doubts.

18Jesus came to them and said, “God has given me full authority in heaven and on earth.

19Therefore go now to all the nations of the world and make them my disciples.

Baptize them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit,

20 and teach them to obey everything I have commanded you. And you should know this: I am with you always, every day, until the end of the world.

## JESUS SHOWS HIMSELF TO THOMAS

24When Jesus came, Thomas, called the Twin, one of the twelve, was not there.

25The other disciples said to him, “We have seen the Lord!” Thomas said to them: “I will never believe this! I would first have to see the traces of the nails on his hands and feel them with my finger and put my hand in his side wound - otherwise not!”

26A week later the disciples were gathered in the house again, and Thomas was with them. The doors were  
Matthew 28:18 (NLT)

26A week later the disciples were gathered in the house again, and Thomas was with them. The doors were locked. Jesus came and stood in their midst and said, “Peace be with you!”

27Then he turned to Thomas and said, “Put your finger here and look at my hands. Reach out and put your hand in my side wound! Stop doubting and believe!”

28Thomas answered, “My Lord and my God!”

29Jesus said to him, “You believe because you have seen me. Everyone who doesn’t see me and still believes in me can rejoice!”

Melanie working in agriculture 2022



Geheimer Brief von Joseph von Arimathäa

<https://youtu.be/Tnh-1Q3sr3k>

## An Indian wisdom

### Two wolves

An aging Cherokee Indian was teaching his two grandchildren. He told them:

“There is a battle going on inside me. A terrible fight. It's the fight between two wolves:

The one wolf represents anger, fear, envy, suffering, worry, regret, greed and greed, arrogance, self-pity, guilt, resentment, feelings of inferiority, lies, malice, arrogance, and selfishness.

The other represents joy, peace, love, hope, sharing, peacefulness, goodness, humility, kindness, compassion, generosity, love of truth, mercy and faith.

The same struggle is taking place within you and within every other human being.”

The children thought for a while, then one of them asked his grandfather:

“And which wolf will win?”

**The old Cherokee had a simple answer:**

**“The one you feed”**

Bringing in the Sheaves BEAUTIFUL Hymn!

[https://youtu.be/1\\_of-MsOhYM](https://youtu.be/1_of-MsOhYM)

With Melanie and Philippe in Canada, on one  
Agricultural trip September 2023



Melanie and Philippe



With Melanie and Philippe, September 2023  
at Niagara Falls in Canada



### An important statement about the Bible.

“To the naked mind the Bible is a controversial book; but the trusting heart finds them reliable. It can only be understood in the world in which it arose, namely in the world of faith. The people who have their say in it have walked the path of faith, and they express what they have experienced on this path. Only those who follow the same path and entrust themselves to God as they entrusted themselves to him will find out that it is true. The people of the Bible invite us to do this. Don't you want to follow this invitation too? You lose nothing that matters, but you gain everything.”

**Pastor Richard Neumaier**

## **Watch out, we're already there, just as the Bible prophesied!**

(Jeremiah 6/13-15 and Jeremiah 8/8-13) (Ezekiel 13/19)



Eva Ebel, professor of religious education, teaches “religion and culture” didactics at the Unterstrass Institute at the Zurich University of Education. (Photo: zvg)

*This article comes from the online cooperation between “reformiert.”, “Interkantonaler Kirchenbote” and “ref.ch”.*

*Interview: Marianne Weymann / ref.ch*

***And was published with my comment.***

“Teachers must be aware of their history with God”

School / The subject “Religion and Culture” has been taught at the Zurich elementary school for ten years. Eva Ebel was involved in its development. In the interview she talks about

Criticism of the subject, about its future in the context of Curriculum 21 and about Muslims who introduce students to Christianity.

**Ms. Ebel, Curriculum 21 is to be introduced in Zurich elementary school in just over a year. What does this mean for the school subject “Religion and Culture”?**

Eva Ebel: We are very relieved that it will remain a separate subject in the Zurich primary school. In the consultation, a wide range of parties from the SP to the SVP as well as the religious communities spoke out in favor of retaining it. There are still changes: With the new curriculum, ethics is also part of this subject. This means that we have to develop new teaching materials and further training for teachers.

**You mentioned the religious communities. How do they assess the subject?**

The majority of the reactions are very positive. Representatives with an evangelical or free church background sometimes complain that too little Christian content is conveyed in “Religion and Culture”. All I can say is that children don't just learn about religion at school. The religious communities are responsible for denominational teaching and they must also assume this responsibility.

In recent years, the Reformed Zurich Regional Church has developed an excellent concept for this with the overall religious education concept. “Religion and Culture,” on the other hand, is non-denominational religious instruction. The aim is to give students knowledge about religions, not to introduce them to the faith.

**So are Bible stories no longer told in “Religion and Culture”?**

The stories are the same. The difference lies in how and why you tell a story. An example: The teacher is no longer allowed to say “We Christians celebrate the birth of Jesus at Christmas, and this is the biblical story about it,” but rather “Christians celebrate the birth of Jesus at Christmas, and it is told as follows in the Bible ». Just like “Hindus are currently celebrating the festival of Diwali and telling such and such a story.” This is not a given, it has to be practiced and is a very important aspect of our training.

### **And then Christmas carols will no longer be sung?**

It depends. The problem is: Many well-known Christmas songs have very clear confessional statements, but we are often not aware of that. Just take “Christ, the Savior” from “Silent Night.” Basically, songs with which I make a confession by singing may certainly be sung in the traditional school Christmas party, but not in “Religion and Culture”. That's why I tell my students: "Take a close look at the songs."

### **That sounds pretty demanding. Most teachers grew up in this Christian culture.**

That's why we not only value specialist knowledge in our training, but above all role competence. The curriculum states: “Teachers are aware of their own positions and beliefs and deal with them sensitively and carefully.” They have to be aware of their own history with God and religion in order to be able to formulate the content neutrally. For this reason



## **Are there actually Muslim teachers in this subject?**

Yes, there are. I myself have and have had a number of Muslim, Jewish and Buddhist students. In the canton's less religiously mixed communities, this can take some getting used to for some parents if their children are taught about Christianity by a Muslim. On the other hand, in places like Schlieren there are almost more Muslim than Christian children in a class, so it is not surprising that the teacher can also be Muslim. Basically, the religious affiliation of the teacher plays no role in this subject.

*This article comes from the online cooperation between “reformiert.”, “Interkantonaler Kirchenbote” and “ref.ch”.*

Interview: Marianne Weymann / ref.ch

## **10 years of “Religion and Culture”**

Religious education in Zurich elementary schools had a difficult time for a long time, and at the beginning of the noughties it was even on the verge of extinction. However, after protests from the population, the cantonal government decided against the originally planned abolition and developed the subject “Religion and Culture”. In contrast to the previous formats “Biblical History” (primary school) and “Confessional-cooperative teaching” (secondary level I), this is non-denominational and compulsory. The cantonal council approved the introduction of the new subject with an overwhelming majority. They started in 2007

first elementary schools in Zurich with the introduction, and “Religion and Culture” has been introduced across the board for around five years.

Eva Ebel, who teaches “Religion and Culture” didactics at the Unterstrass Institute at the Zurich University of Education and helped develop the subject, speaks of a “successful model”. However, the effort was huge: around 3,500 teachers at the primary level and over 300 teachers at the lower secondary level had to be retrained in order to enable the canton-wide introduction and to guarantee the required teaching quality.

## **1 comment**

Hans Bieri, Dotzigenstrasse 18, 3264 Diessbach near Büren  
March 8, 2017 - 00:15

### **Good afternoon Ms. Eva Ebel**

I don't want to offend you with a word, I don't know you, but I would like to tell you one thing: you don't have to invent new things, because the **"old" is more than "new"**.

They didn't need to give any additional training, just to proclaim the truth that has been known for thousands of years. There are well over a thousand religions in this world, but every single one is idolatry. Only the gospel of Jesus Christ leads to the kingdom of heaven. Jesus is the only way to the kingdom of heaven and not any other religion.

Pastor announces:

“...they count the Lord's (honest and stirring) word as a mockery and do not want to have it.” (Jeremiah 6/10)

God's threats against sinners frighten people. So they try to make it ridiculous so it doesn't sound so harsh to them. Today we notice this when people talk about hell. Nobody is really afraid of it because

The topic is always ridiculed and only jokes are made about it.

But since people do not want to accept the uncomfortable truth from the Bible, God's Word is "shaped" and "bent" by the lying preachers until it sounds pleasant. It is then preached in a toned-down manner - and people like to hear it.

"...prophets and priests all deal with lies..." (Jeremiah 6/13-15 and Jeremiah 8/8-13)

They preach their half-truths "...to my people, who love to hear lies." (Ezekiel 13/19)

And if you push God's threats far enough away from yourself, then over time you will no longer believe that you are in danger.

Since God does not punish sins immediately (but only on the last day), people do not see the danger - and do not want to acknowledge it.

"Because the judgment of evil does not come immediately (is not carried out immediately), the hearts of men become full of desire to do evil." (Ecclesiastes Solomon 8:11)

People think that they themselves are "the good guys" and that others are "the bad ones and sinners". That is why they cannot and do not want to imagine that Jesus Christ will send them, of all people, to eternal damnation. They comfort themselves deep down: "The others will definitely go to hell, but not me..."

Hell is also always considered by the entertainment industry

depicted something ridiculous. And you don't have to be afraid of something that makes you laugh. Yes, Satan knows how to take away people's fear of eternal damnation.

Why don't the churches talk more openly about the fact that hell will be "very unpleasant"? Because this would scare away the believing sheep. The contributors don't want to hear it, so they would run away from them. And this must be prevented at all costs! This is the main task of the churches today!

But where there is no enlightenment, no conversion from the wrong path can be expected. So people happily sing and laugh and run to their own destruction.

Hardly anyone understands that it is really very difficult to enter God's kingdom.

People don't want to think about death. Only thinking about what awaits us after death can make us wise so that we leave the wrong, sinful path and follow God's path.

The many lying preachers calm people down by convincing them that Jesus Christ died for all sinners. Because it sounds good, a lot of people believe it.

God says: "...they have eyes to see and do not want to see, and ears to hear and do not want to hear..." (Ezekiel 12:2)

Do not do as they do, but obey the Lord. My wish would be that you become thoughtful now and then consider whether you might want to have both feet in the future

go on God's way.

It could be that you are already carefully following God's path with only one foot (you often do good things and also read the Bible), while the other leg is still walking on the "normal" path. But there is no "normal" way.

There is only God's narrow path that leads you to eternal life (in God's kingdom) - and there is the broad path that almost all people walk (even if they consider themselves very religious and believers), but that takes you will lead straight to eternal damnation.

Jesus Christ explains this to us by saying:

“Enter through the narrow gate. For wide is the gate and broad is the way that leads to damnation, and many (people) enter it (the broad and easy way) (into eternal damnation). How narrow is the gate and how narrow the path that leads to (eternal) life, and there are (only) a few (people) who find it (this narrow path to eternal life)” (and then actually walk on this path ). (Matthew 7/13-14)

“For what was written beforehand (in the Old Testament) was written for our teaching...” (Romans 15/4)

So let the Bible teach you, because it is God's word. Do not believe the well-sounding sayings of the many lying preachers who tell you with half-truths that God loves sinners.

They are not mistaken by accident, but rather they are deliberately lying to people, because they are acting on behalf of Satan. They want to seduce believers into passivity. That is their mission and their goal. Don't let her leave you

Blind piety. They are wolves in sheep's clothing who merely present themselves as pious.

With kind regards  
Hans Bieri

hb44@bluewin.ch  
<https://hans-bieri.ch>

Birthplace of our Savior  
2018 in Bethlehem Israel



**My Savior Rock of Salvation**  
<https://youtu.be/ebNoCE5bQXg>

**My Lord and my God!**  
I say these words too!

Thomas, a disciple, said these words when he saw the wounds on Jesus. Only then did he believe that our Savior was truly resurrected.

## How do you know the Bible is true?

Hundreds of books have been written about the evidence for the divine origin of the Bible, and this evidence is varied and of different types. Unfortunately, most people today have never read these books. Few have even read the Bible themselves! So many people tend to subscribe to the general opinion that the Bible is full of errors and is no longer relevant in the modern world.

Yet the authors of the Bible repeatedly claimed to be accurately reporting the infallible Word of God. This is a most astonishing claim for a writer to make, and if the 40 or so men who wrote the Bible were wrong, then they were either liars or madmen, or both.

On the other hand, if the greatest and most influential book of all time, containing the most beautiful literature and the most perfect moral law, was written by pure fanatics, is there any hope of ever finding meaning in this world?

Anyone who seriously examines and researches this Biblical evidence will find that these claims of divine inspiration (found over 3,000 times in a variety of ways) are largely justifiable.

### Fulfilled prophecies

The fulfilled prophecies of the Bible are just one remarkable piece of evidence. Hundreds of Bible prophecies were fulfilled explicitly and with astonishing accuracy, often long after the death of the prophet in question.

For example, in 538 B.C., Daniel the Prophet predicted that the Messiah would come as Israel's long-promised Savior and Prince, 483 years after the Persian Emperor gave the Jews the

right to restore Jerusalem, which was then in ruins to build. Daniel 9:24-27 Hundreds of years later this was clearly and distinctly fulfilled.

There are detailed prophecies about individual countries and cities, and about the general course of history, all of which have clearly been fulfilled. Over 300 prophecies were fulfilled by Christ when he first came. Other prophecies have to do with the spread of Christianity and false religions, as well as many other topics.

There is no other book like this, ancient or modern. The vague and usually erroneous prophecies of people like Jeanne Dixon, Nostradamus, Edgar Cayce, and many others, absolutely do not belong in the same category, nor can we include other religious books, such as the Koran, the Annals of Confucius, and similar religious writings here compare with the Bible. Only the Bible manifests these astonishing prophetic evidences, and on such a large scale that any explanation other than divine inspiration is completely absurd and therefore impossible.

## Unique historical accuracy

The historical accuracy of the Bible is also quite astonishing, and is far superior to that of the written records of Egypt, Assyria, and other early peoples. Archaeological confirmation of the Biblical record has been almost innumerable over the last century. Dr. Nelson Glueck, probably the most important expert in Israeli archeology today, said:

“No archaeological discovery has ever contradicted a Biblical reference. A great number of archaeological finds have been made that confirm the historical statements of the Bible in clear contours or in precise detail. And in the same way, thorough



evaluations of biblical descriptions have often led to astonishing discoveries.”

(This quote was translated directly from the English version into German by the translator)

## Scientific accuracy

Further impressive evidence of divine inspiration is found in the fact that many principles of modern science were recorded in the Bible as laws of nature long before scientists proved them through experiments. Here are some examples:

### Translate the Bible heel with Google Translation

- Die Erde als Kugel ([Jesaja 40:22](#))
- Die scheinbare Unendlichkeit des Universums ([Jesaja 55:9](#))
- Das Gesetz der Bewahrung von Menge und Energie ([2 Petrus 3:7](#))
- Der Kreislauf des Wassers ([Prediger 1:7](#))
- Die riesige Menge der Sterne ([Jeremia 33:22](#))
- Das Gesetz der Vermehrung von Entropie ([Psalm 102:25-27](#))
- Die Bedeutung des Blutes als Lebenslexier ([Leviticus 17:11](#))
- Kreislauf der Atmosphäre ([Prediger 1:6](#))
- Gravitationsfeld ([Hiob 26:7](#))
- und viele andere.

Wozu gibt es Sterne? – Werner Gitt

<https://youtu.be/TcQLgsRzDHs>

Of course, this does not correspond to the technical terminology of modern science, but as far as the basics of everyday life are concerned, they are completely consistent with most modern scientific facts.

It is also significant that not a single real error has yet been shown in the Bible, whether in science, history, or other subjects. This has of course been claimed many times, but conservative biblical scholarship

## Unique structure

The remarkable structure of the Bible should also be emphasized. Although the Bible is a collection of 66 books written by over 40 different men over a period of 2,000 years, the Bible is clearly a single book, with perfect unity and consistency from beginning to end.

The individual authors had no idea at the time of writing that their message would ultimately be included in such a book. Nevertheless, each book fits perfectly and serves its own special purpose as a part of the whole. Anyone who studies the Bible carefully will continually find remarkable structural and mathematical patterns woven through its material, with an intricacy and symmetry that cannot be explained as coincidence or collusion.

The existing theme of the Bible, which grows to greatness from Genesis to Revelation, is God's great work of creation and redemption of all, through His only Son, Jesus Christ.

## The Unique Impact of the Bible

The Bible is also unique in its impact on individual men and women and on the history of nations. It is the all-time bestseller that appeals to both the heart and the mind. The Bible is loved by at least some people of every race, people, or tribe to which

it has been brought - rich or poor, educated or uneducated, king or commoner - people from all walks of life. No other book has ever had such general appeal or had such far-reaching, long-term impact.

We find the final proof that the Bible is true in the statements of those who believed in it. Thousands of people, both today and in the past, know from personal experience that the Bible offers us true promises, wise do's and don'ts, and best counsel, and that it contains a wonderful message of salvation that is timeless eternity is enough.

Whoever does not accept the kingdom of heaven like a child  
Will never get in

Matthew 18.3



Juliana 2024  
«My smallest of the five grandchildren»



Seeing and Hearing  
[https://youtu.be/44gr5V0do\\_k](https://youtu.be/44gr5V0do_k)

I'm telling you:  
Take in all these words  
in your heart, you will find it in the  
Holy Scripture!

For whoever asks receives!  
And whoever looks for it will find it!  
And whoever knocks, it will be opened to him!

Matthew 7:8

«I don't want to beat anyone into heaven,  
but I want to save you from hell!"

**You never have to do anything**  
it should come from your heart.  
Then you will long for the **“Holy Water”**,  
that will never make you thirsty again!

### **Three questions for you**

Where do you come from? ..... **I come from Jesus!**

What are you doing here? ..... **I live with Jesus!**

Where are you going? ..... **I go to Jesus!**

### **Jesus answered:**

»I am the way, for I am the truth and the life. There is no other  
way to get to the father.”

John 14:6

## The best sermons I have ever heard!

### Pastor Olaf Latzel: Sermons and lectures



<https://youtu.be/kPLrCtvu7-8>  
<https://youtu.be/UGMuurpZJO4>  
<https://youtu.be/RRKmiWrROZg>  
<https://youtu.be/yntFZXdiXoc>  
<https://youtu.be/x21EboiEkaI>  
<https://youtu.be/3w1xFalczh0>  
[https://youtu.be/\\_VpI7QyS\\_3k](https://youtu.be/_VpI7QyS_3k)

(What comes after death?)  
(Dying is my gain)  
(What is the meaning of life?)  
(The left-green church)  
(Warning to the wicked)  
(Believe the Gospel)  
(Life with Jesus)

### Prof. Dr. Werner Gitt: Sermons and lectures



<https://youtu.be/XYWrVtczn0c>  
<https://youtu.be/iIg8ke0BLkc>  
[https://youtu.be/opqRO3m\\_Av0](https://youtu.be/opqRO3m_Av0)  
[https://youtu.be/bepDmC\\_1XN4](https://youtu.be/bepDmC_1XN4)  
<https://youtu.be/k6ZGTGFCzRE>  
[https://youtu.be/\\_sHyhGy9lkE](https://youtu.be/_sHyhGy9lkE)  
<https://youtu.be/5giuWEIJtYI>  
<https://youtu.be/Xke55leWYfg>

(Give My Life to Jesus)  
(How do I design my life)  
(Look forward to heaven)  
(Is the Bible true?)  
(All religions the same?)  
(Are you saved or lost?)  
(Why suffering and death)  
Where is this world going?

Set your thoughts above where our Savior is, and you  
will have success in this life  
everything for free!

Colossians 3:1-3

My favorite song of praise to mine  
God and Savior

Psalm 13:6

Praise the Lord!

<https://youtu.be/5BCpIEIbGPw>



This is what God says to you:

I tell you again: be courageous and determined! Do not be  
afraid and let nothing frighten you; for I, the Lord your God,  
am with you wherever you go!”

Joshua 1:9

~ 330 ~

Family Marbots Galloways Spring 2024  
<https://youtu.be/fo9nq1DOoWQ>



I'm looking forward to heaven

**“My Lord and my God”**

My dear God and Father, my dear Savior Jesus Christ, you revealed yourself to me early in my life, when I was seven years old.

When I speak of you God, I also mean Jesus Christ; when I speak of you Jesus Christ, I also mean God. You have given the Holy Spirit to the “born again” so that we can understand to some extent how great your grace is.

The most beautiful thing is that I can call you my father, oh my dear father in heaven, I am yours!

You showed me the stony path and the narrow gate that leads to you in heaven!



Many think they are on this path, but few will pass through this gate! This is what it says in the “Holy Scripture”. Matthew 7:14

Many people say, let's live in luxury, we'll be dead tomorrow. How stupid, these people don't understand God's words!

My dear Father in heaven, lead me on the narrow path, give me strength, your holy spirit, lift your hand over me and guide me in my life in all my actions and thoughts!

My dear father, why do you give me such strong faith, why do you fulfill all my wishes, why do you open all the doors for me that I knock on?

My dear Jesus Christ, give me water from your never-ending fountain, the water of eternal life. I not only know it, I feel it very firmly, you are with me at all times and hold your hand over me. You are so big and powerful, I love you with all my strength, with all my actions and thoughts. You are so big and yet most people don't recognize you!

My dear God and Father, my dear Savior Jesus Christ, show yourself to all people as you do to me. That they will believe in you, like you do for me every day!

My dear Father and Savior, take me in your arms and never let me go again!

I wrote this on Sept. 15, 2004, 1:20 a.m.

Whoever does not ask about God creates a lot of grief for himself;but whoever trusts in the LORD will experience his goodness.

Psalm 32:10

## Is there a hell?

Many people today no longer want to accept the existence of “hell” and attribute it to the Middle Ages and fantasy. Hell has something to do with God's judgment and punishment. That people will one day have to answer to God for all their actions and that not everyone will automatically go to heaven. The person who is far from faith naturally finds this oppressive and suppresses the thoughts of God's judgment and punishment and a hell. Even many theologians deny the existence of “hell”, even though the Bible speaks of hell in warning terms.

A shake-up from Prof. Dr. Werner Gitt  
and Pastor Olaf Latzel



A shake-up from Prof. Dr. Werner Gitt  
and Pastor Olaf Latzel

<https://youtu.be/26O4lGpUYA0>

[https://youtu.be/\\_sHyhGy9lkE](https://youtu.be/_sHyhGy9lkE)

<https://youtu.be/CeFhlqG4oko>

<https://youtu.be/yntFZXdiXoc>

My heartfelt animal lover Melanie 2023,  
saved a fawn.



Christmas 2024

<https://youtu.be/YKLWJ8Tjgfc>

Song: Rejoice, world, in Jesus Christ

<https://youtu.be/CpvIRzOLhJ0>

Only goodness and grace will surround me  
all the days of my life, and I  
will live in the house of  
LORD for all time

Psalm 23:6

~ 334 ~

## **Weitere einmalige Predigten und Vorträge von Prof. Dr. Werner Gitt und Pastor Olaf Latzel**

<https://youtu.be/0bCNmEKjCfU>

Kann man Gott beweisen? Prof. Dr. Werner Gitt

<https://youtu.be/sWN023jaZlg>

WARUM ICH ALS WISSENSCHAFTLER DER BIBEL GLAUBE  
Prof. Dr. Werner Gitt

[https://youtu.be/x\\_eudibPJ\\_Q](https://youtu.be/x_eudibPJ_Q)

Die böse geldgierige Welt wird gerichtet. Pastor Olaf Latzel

<https://youtu.be/sRa-cbisFIU>

Der Herr Jesus kommt bald wieder! Pastor Olaf Latzel

<https://youtu.be/1jCHsC3940E>

Kann ein Christ verloren gehen? Prof. Dr. Werner Gitt

<https://youtu.be/YLPYvg19qZE>

Ist der Islam eine Religion des Friedens?  
Prof. Dr. Werner Gitt

<https://youtu.be/jy8LkqywjW0>

Wie erhalte ich Weisung Gottes für mein Leben??  
Pastor Olaf Latzel

[https://youtu.be/\\_WOBdkwO5sU](https://youtu.be/_WOBdkwO5sU)

Was ist mit dem Leid in der Welt?? Pastor Olaf Latzel

<https://youtu.be/cU83Lt1zjEs>

Der Himmel - Ein Platz auch für dich? Prof. Dr. Werner Gitt

<https://youtu.be/iIg8ke0BLkc>

Wie gestalte ich mein Leben erfolgreich?

Prof. Dr. Werner Gitt

<https://youtu.be/hk4n5U-R93M>

Stehe ich fest im Glauben? – Olaf Latzel

[https://youtu.be/7GI\\_f\\_c4GuAA](https://youtu.be/7GI_f_c4GuAA)

Sechs Merkmale falscher Propheten - Olaf Latzel

<https://youtu.be/ywY60nI5S7E>

Wozu gibt es Sterne? – Prof. Dr. Werner Gitt

<https://youtu.be/MABWgEz0gFc>

Die Bibel auf dem Prüfstand des 21. Jahrhunderts

Prof. Dr. Werner Gitt

<https://youtu.be/E0eEwfly0W0>

Leben als Kind des Lichtes – Olaf Latzel

<https://youtu.be/-FpsJK9oXZM>

Was bringt es, Jesus zu folgen? – Olaf Latzel

<https://youtu.be/AZoJaxCu7jU>

Wovor ein Christ sich hüten soll – Olaf Latzel

<https://youtu.be/RCDJDN05RH0>

Wachstum im Glauben – Olaf Latzel

<https://youtu.be/msKxmN0XISw>

Überraschungen in der Schöpfung Prof. Dr. Werner Gitt

<https://youtu.be/7l3EfYpHynE>

Dr. Werner Gitt über die deutliche Botschaft in der Schöpfung:  
Atheisten liegen komplett falsch!

Colossians 3

## **A new life through Christ**

1If you have been raised with Christ, look up to Christ, who is at his right hand.

2Set your minds on earth, not on earthly things.

3For you have died, and your life is hidden with Christ.

4When Christ, your life, is revealed to all, you too will be revealed with him in all the glory that is now yours.

5Therefore, put to death all earthly things in you: sexual immorality, sensuality, passion, evil desires, and covetousness, which is idolatry.

6Because of these things comes the judgment of God.

7You also lived in the same way when you were still earthly.

8But now you must put off all these things: anger and wrath, malice, insults and slander.

9Do not lie to one another, for you have put off the old man with his habits.

10And have put on the new man, the renewed man in the knowledge of God and what God wants, who has been renewed in the image of him who at the beginning created him in his own image.

My 80th birthday with my wife Marlis and Simon



My yodeling song for my 80th birthday,  
played and sung by  
Vroni and Margrit

[https://youtu.be/qgGcNC\\_rLVI](https://youtu.be/qgGcNC_rLVI)

Our five grandchildren in 2024 at my 80th birthday



Juliana the youngest grandchild 2024



Dr Werner Gitt Jesus kommt wieder! Die gottlose Welt geht  
auf ihr Ende zu

[https://youtu.be/S871dpxx\\_ck](https://youtu.be/S871dpxx_ck)



I tell you very clearly and clearly:

Anyone who has read this book  
can't even say:

**"I did not know that!"**

**Nearer my God to You**

<https://youtu.be/-Q6a95okeSI>



So keep your eyes open and be vigilant!  
Because you don't know when,  
the time comes !

Mark 13:33

~ 340 ~

Daughter-in-law, son-in-law, children and grandchildren



Matthew 7

### **Final warning**

13 »Go through the narrow gate! Because the gate to ruin is wide and so is the road that leads there. Many are traveling on it. 14 But the gate that leads to life is narrow and the way there is narrow. Few find him. ”

**Finally, something very important!**  
**What if?**

I cannot imagine that there is only one person in this world  
who does not ask the big question:  
What if the Bible is right?

With great love  
Hans Bieri

~ 341 ~